THE HISTORIES OF THE LIVES and RAIGNES OF HENRY THE III. AND HENRY THE IIII. Kings of *England*.

Written, by

Sr. ROBERT COTTON, And Sr. JOHN [illegible] } Knights.

LONDON,
Printed for *William Sheares*, at the Bible in St. *Pauls* Church-yard, 1652.

Henricus III D. G. Rex Ang:
Dux Aquit: etc Dom: Hib.

THE HISTORIES OF THE LIVES and RAIGNES OF HENRY THE III. AND HENRY THE IIII. Kings of *England*.

Written, by

Sr. ROBERT COTTON, } Knights.
And
Sr. JOHN [illegible] }

LONDON,
Printed for *William Sheares*, at the Bible in St. *Pauls* Church-yard, 1652.

UM

X942.03
C82h
1652

A SHORT VIEW OF THE LONG RAIGN OF KING HENRY the third.

WEaried with the lingring calamities of Civill Armes, and affrighted at the ſudden fall of a licentious Soveraigne, all men ſtood at gaze, expecting the event of their long deſires (Peace) and iſſue of their new hopes (Benefit.) For in every

ſhift of Princes there are few, either ſo meane, or modeſt, that pleaſe not themſelves with ſome probable object of preferment. To ſatisfie all, a child aſcendeth the throne, mild and gracious, but eaſie of nature, whoſe Innocency and naturall goodneſſe led him ſafe along the various dangers of his Fathers Raigne: Happy was hee in his Vnkle the Earle of *Pembrooke*, the guide of his infancy, and no leſſe then for thirty yeares after, whil'ſt *De Burgo*, that faſt ſervant of his Fathers againſt the *French*, both in *Normandy* and *England*, with *Bygod* Earle of *Norfolke*, and others of like gravity and experience did mannage the affaires. Few and no other were the diſtempers then in State, but ſuch as are incident to all, the Commons greedy of liberty, and the Nobility of Rule, and but one violent ſtorme raiſed by ſome old and conſtant followers of his Father, *Fulco de Brent de Fortibus*, and others, men that could onely thrive by the Warres, miſliking thoſe dayes of ſloath (for ſo they termed

Hiſt. Minor. Mat. Paris.

Matth. Paris. Hiſt. Major.

med that calme of King *Henries* Government;) and the rather becauſe the Iuſtice of quiet times urged from them to the lawfull owners, ſuch Lands and Caſtles, as the fury of Warre had unjuſtly given them, for finding in the uprightneſſe of the King, that power of protection ſhould not bee made a wrong doer, they fell out into that rebellion, that with it, ended their lives and competitours, profeſſing that thoſe their ſwords that had ſet the Crowne upon their Soveraignes head, when neither Majeſty nor Law could, ſhould now ſecure thoſe ſmall pittances to their Maiſters, when Majeſty or Law would not. Dangerous are too great benefits of Subjects to their Princes, when it maketh the mind onely capable of merit, nothing of duty. No other diſquiet did the State after this feele, but ſuch as is incident in all, the malice to Authority: Good and great men may ſecure themſelves from guilt, but not from envy: for the greateſt in truſt of publike affaires are ſtill ſhot at by the.

Hiſt. S. Albani.

aſpiring of thoſe that deeme themſelves leſſe in imployment then they are in merit. Theſe vapours did ever and eaſily vaniſh ſo long as the helme was guided by temperate Spirits, and the King tied his Actions to the rule of good Councell, and not to young, paſſionate, or ſingle adviſe.

Chron. de Dunest Ioan. de Walsingford.

Thirty yeares now paſſed, and all the old guides of his youth now dead, but *De Burgo*, (a man in whom nothing of worth was wanting but moderation,) whoſe length of dayes giving him the advantage of ſole power, his owne Ambition and age gave him deſire, and Art, to keepe out others, which wrought him into the fatall envy of moſt, and that encreaſed in the Title of Earle, and great Offices the King then gave him. *Time* by this, had wrought, as in it ſelfe, ſo in the hearts of the people, a Revolution, the afflictions of their Fathers forgotten, and the ſurfeit of long peace; perchance having let in ſome abuſes; from hence, the Commons to whom dayes preſent ſeeme ever worſt,

worſt, commend the foregone ages they never remembred, and condemne the preſent, though they knew neither the diſeaſe thereof, nor the remedy.

To theſe idle and uſuall humours, fell in ſome of the yong and noble Spirits, warme and over-weaning (who being as truly ignorant as the reſt) firſt by ſullying the wiſedome of the preſent, and greateſt Rulers, (making each caſuall miſhap their errours:) ſeeme to decipher every blemiſh in Government, and then by holding certaine imaginary and fantaſtick formes of Common-wealths, flatter their owne beleefe and ability, that they can mold any State, to theſe generall rules, which in particular application will prove idle and groſſe abſurdities. *Chron. de Litchfield.*

Next confirmed in their owne worth by *Sommery* and *Spencer*, they take it a fit time to worke themſelves into action, and imployment, a thing they had long deſired, and now (though unwilling to ſeeme ſo) doe *Gual. de Corven.*

ſue for; and doubtleſſe, the furtheſt of their aime was yet, to become quiet inſtruments in ſerving the State, if they had beene then held fit and worthy.

But the King taught by the new Earle, That *Conſilia ſenum haſtas juvenum eſſe*; and that ſuch wits, (for ſo they would bee ſtiled) were *Novandis quàm gerendis rebus aptiores*; fitter in being factious to diſorder, then to ſettle affaires, either denied or delayed their deſires; for wiſe Princes will ever chooſe their Inſtruments *Par negotiis*, and not *ſupra*, Creatures out of meere election, that are onely theirs, otherwiſe, without friends or power.

Mat. Paris. Hiſt. Minor. Amongſt this unequall medly, there were of the Nobility, *Richard* Earle of *Pembrooke*, *Glocester*, and *Hartford*, darlings of the multitude; ſome for the merit of their Fathers, whoſe memories they held ſacred, as Pillars of publike liberty and oppoſers of encroaching Monarchy: at *Runemed* the Armies met. And of the Gentry, *Fitz-*

Fitz-Geffeory, Bardolph, Grisley, Maunsell and *Fitz-John*, Spirits of as much Acrimony and Arrogant spleene, as the places from whence they were elected, Campe, Court, or Countrey, could afford any: These by force would effect what the other did affect by cunning; but all impatient, to see their ends thus frustrate, and that so long as the King followed the direction of the Earle of *Kent*, they had small hope of their desires, they made often meetings; and as one saith of them, *Clam & nocturnis colloquia ant flexum in vesperum die.* *Chron. Petri Pectavien.* *Mat. Paris.*

In the end, *Sommery* and *Spencer*, two that were farre in opinion with the rest, Gentlemen, by Forraine education and imployment, more qualified then usually men of these times; and that set upon their owne deserts; the best places when the Streame should turne, (which one of them, *Spencer*, did unworthily obtaine, for he died in actuall Rebellion, *Justiciarius Angliæ*, against his master) advised that the best meanes to re-

move that great and good obſtacle, the Earle of *Kent*, out of the way of their advancement, was by ſifting into his actions, and ſiding with his oppoſite. *Peter* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, (an ill man, but gracious with the King) making ſtill their ends, that the worthieſt being driven out by the worſt, they ſhall either bee able to mate him with his owne vice, which will bee ever more viſible, as hee is more potent, and ſo remove him at pleaſure; or elſe give over the King to ſuch Miniſters, to their bad deſires, as looſing him the hearts of his people, might ſmooth them away to their bad deſires, *Honores quos quieta Reipublica deſperant, perturbata conſequi ſe poſſe arbitrantur.* Thus, Counſell heard, approved and put in practice, the corrupt, and ambitious Biſhop is eaſily inſnared to their part, by money and opinion, or increaſe of power.

Cicero in Catil. ſive Orat. prima.

Articles are in all haſt forged, and urged againſt the Earle, as ſale of Crowne land; waſt of the Kings Treaſure;

ſure; and laſtly, (that which theſe doubtfull times held capitall) his giving allowance to any thing that might breed a rupture betweene the Soveraigne and the Subjects, as hee had done in making way with the King, to annihilate all Patents granted in his nonage, and enforced the Subject to pay as the record ſaith, *Non juxta ſingulorum facultatem, ſed quicquid Juſtitiarius æſtimabat.*

Lib. Bermonſey vita Abbatiſ. Albani.

Well? hee cleared himſelfe of all, but the laſt, and did worthily periſh by it; for acts that fill Princes Coffers, are ever the ruines of their firſt Inventers; bad times corrupt good Councels, and make the beſt Miniſters, yeeld to the luſt of Princes, therefore this King cannot paſſe blameleſſe, that would ſo eaſily blemiſh all former merits, of ſo good a ſervant, for that wherein himſelfe was chiefe in fault.

But Princes natures are more variable, and ſooner cloid then others, more tranſitory their favours, and as their minds are large, ſo they eaſily over-

over-looke their first election, tying their affections, no further then their owne satisfactions.

The Bishop now alone manageth the State; chooseth his chiefe instrument, *Peter de Rivallis*, a man like himselfe; displaceth his natives, and draweth *Poictions* and *Brittons* into Offices of best trust, and benefit; and the King into an evill opinion of his people. For nothing is more against the nature of the *English*, then to have Strangers rule over them: of this mans time, *Wendover*, an Authour then living, saith, *Iuditia commutuntur injustis Leges ex legibus Pax discordantibus justitia injuriosis.* Thus the plot of the tumultuous Barons went cleare, and had not the discreeter Bishop calmed all by dutifull perswasions, and informing the King that the support of this bold mans power (whose carriage before had lost his Father, *Normandy* the love of his people, and in that his Crowne) would by teaching the sonne to reject in passion the just petitions of his loyall Sub-

Regis Roffen. Annalis de Ely.

Subjects, (as of late the Earle of *Pembrooke* his Earle Marſhall of *England* the due of his Office) drive all the State into diſcontent by his bad adviſe, and corrupt manners, doubtleſſe the rebellious Lords had ended this diſtemper, as their deſigne was, in a civill Warre.

Denials from Princes muſt bee ſupplied with gracious uſage, that though they cure not the ſore; yet they may abate the ſence of it; but beſt it is, that all favours come directly from themſelves; denials and things of bitterneſſe from their Miniſters.

Thus are the Strangers all diſplaced and baniſhed, *Rivallis* extortions ranſackt, by many ſtrict Commiſſions of enquiry; the Biſhop ſent away diſgraced, finds now that *Nulla qua ſita ſcelere potentia diuturna*; and that in Princes favours there is no ſubſiſtance betweene the higheſt of all, and precipitation. The Lords ſtill fruſtrate of their malicious ends, beganne to ſow of theſe late grounds of the peoples diſcontent, *Querelas & ambiguos de*

Clauſ. anno 37. H. 3. M. 26. Chron. Hell.

de Principe sermones & quoq; alia turbamenta vulgi, and tooke it up a fashion to endeare and glorifie themselves with the senceleſſe multitude, by depraving the Kings discretion, and Governement; whoſe nature too gentle for ſuch inſolent Spirits, was forced (as *Trevet* ſaith) to ſeeke as hee preſently did, adviſe and love amongſt ſtrangers, ſeeing no deſert could purchaſe it at home, all bare themſelves like Tutors and Controllers, few like Subjects and Councellours. God wee ſee holdeth the hearts of Princes, and ſendeth them ſuch Councellours as the quality of the Subject meriteth.

Chron. Litchf.

Mat. Paris, Roger Wendover.

For *Mountford* a *Frenchman* became the next Object of the Kings delight, a Gentleman of choyce blood, education, and feature, on this mans content, the heady affection of the Soveraigne did ſo much Doate, that at his firſt entrance of Grace, in envy of the Nobility, hee made him Earle of *Leyceſter*; and in no leſſe offence of the Clergy, by violating the rites

of

of the holy Church, gave him his vowed, vailed ſiſter to wife: More of Art then uſually ſome have deemed this act of the Kings, making the tye of his dependancy, the ſtrength of his aſſurance, ſo both at his will.

Mountford made wanton thus with dalliance of his Maſter, forgetteth moderation, for ſeldome diſcretion in youth attendeth great and ſuddaine fortunes, hee draweth all publike affaires into his owne hands, all favours muſt paſſe from him, all preferments by him, all ſuites addreſſed to him, the King but as a cipher ſet to adde to this figure, the more of number. Great is the Soveraignes errour, when the hope of Subjects muſt recognize it ſelfe beholden to the ſervant, which ought immediately to bee acknowledged, from the goodneſſe and good election of himſelfe: Though Princes may take above others ſome repoſefull friend, with whom they may participate their neereſt paſſions; yet ought they ſo to temper

Chron. Ioan. Sulgrave.

per the affaires of their favour, that they corrupt not the effects of their principalities.

At this the great and graveſt men began to grieve, knowing the unworthy without honour, or merit, thus to deale alone in that which ſhould paſſe through their hands, and to leape over all their heads, to the greateſt Honour and Offices, and therefore runne along with the then riſing grace of the Kings halfe brethren, (though ſtrangers) hoping thereby to devide that power, which otherwiſe they ſaw impoſſible to breake.

Chron. Reading. *Leyceſter* confident of his Maſters love, and impatient to beare either rivall in favour, or partner in rule, oppoſeth them all, but findeth in his ebbe of favour, the Fortune of others, and that this King could ever as eaſily transferre his fancy, as hee had ſetled his affection. Great wee ſee muſt bee the art and cunning of that man, that keepes himſelfe a floate in the ſtreame of Soveraignes favour, ſince the change

change of Princes wils, which for the moſt part are full of fancy and ſoone ſatiate are hardly arreſted: Who ſo would effect this, muſt onely attend the honour and ſervice of his Maſter, and diſpoiled of all other reſpects, transforme himſelfe into his inward inclination and worke into neceſſity of imployment, by undergoing the Offices of moſt ſecrecy, either of publick ſervice, or Princes pleaſures; hee muſt alſo beate downe Competitours of worth by the hands of others, conceale his owne greatneſſe in publick, with a fained humility, and what impotency or Government hee affecteth, let it rather ſeeme the worke of others, out of conveniency, then any appetite of his owne.

Now were the raines of rule, by this advantage, taken by the rebellious Lords, and put alone into the hands of the Kings halfe brethren: *Adam, Guido, Godfray*, and *William*, himſelfe as before; *Et magna Fortuna licentiam tantum uſurpans*: For to act his owne part, hee was ever wier-drawne when her

H. Knighton. Mob. Leyceſt.

he had such worthy servants as would often for his Honour urge it. For these Masters, (as *Wallingford* termeth them) *Tanta elati jactantia quod nec superiorem sibi intelligunt, nec parem mellitis & mollitis adulationibus animum Regis pro libito voluntatis à ratione tramite declinantes*; doe alone what they list. They fill up the place of Iustice and Trust, with their Countrey-men, strangers exact of whom, how, and what they please, wast the Treasure and Crowne lands on themselves, and their followers; set prices on all offences, and raine the Law within the rule of their owne Breasts. The usuall reply of their servants, to the plaints of the Kings Subjects, being *Quis tibi rectum faciet? Dominus rex vult; quod Dominus meus vult*; these Strangers seemed in their Lawlesse carriage not to have beene invited, but to have entred the state by Conquest: The great men they enforced not to obey, but to serve, and the meane to live so as they might justly say, they had nothing; yet least the

Will. de Rishanger.

Lib. Monastery Ramsey.

the King ſhould heare the groanes of his people, and the wickednesse of his Miniſters, which good and able men would tell him, they barre all ſuch acceſſe: Suſpition being the beſt preſerver of her owne deſerts; aimeth at theſe, who hath more of vertue then themſelves, as fearing them moſt. Thus is the incapacity of Government in a King, when it fals to bee a prey to ſuch Lawleſſe Minions, the ground of infinite corruption in all the members of the State; all take warrant generally from Princes weakeneſſes, of licentious liberty and greatneſſe, makes profit particularly by it, and therefore give way to encreaſe ill, to encreaſe their gaines.

A Famine accompanieth theſe corruptions, and that ſo violent, that the King is enforced to direct Writes to all the Shires, *Ad pauperes mortuos ſepeliendos famis media deficientes*: Famine proceeds, *Fames præceſſit & ſecutus eſt gladius tam terribilis ut nemo inermis, ecura poſſit, Provincias peragare:*

Clauſ. anno 42. Hen. 3.

Chro. London.

agare : For all the Villages of the Kingdome were left a prey to the lawlesse Multitude : Who *Per diversas partes itinerantes velut per Consentum aliorum*, (as the Record saith) did imply that the factious Lords suspected by the King, had given some heat to that commotion ; Seditious Peeres bringing ever fewell to such popular fires.

Wil. de Rishanger.

Neither was the Church without a busie part in this Tragick worke; for *Walter* Bishop of *Worcester*, and *Robert* of *Lincolne*, to whom *Mountford* and his faction, *Præ cordialiter adherebant* were farre ingaged. In such designes, Church-men are never wanting, and the distast of the present Government, (as well in the Church as in the Common-wealth) will ever bee a knot of strength for such unquiet Spirits, who as well frame to themselves some other forme of Government; then the present in the Church, as in the temporall state, as that which with the giddy multitude winneth best opinion, and did at this time fitly

fitly ſuite the peoples humours, ſo much diſtaſting the new Courts of the Clergy, their pompe, their greedineſſe, and the Popes extortions.

A faire pretext was it to thoſe factious Biſhops, to uſe their bitter pens and ſpeeches, ſo farre againſt Religious Orders, Ceremonies, and State of the Church, that one of them incurred the ſentence of Excommunication at *Rome*, and Treaſon at home; for hee enjoyned the Earle of *Leyceſter*, *In remiſſione peccatorum ut cauſam illam* (meaning his Rebellions) *uſque ad mortem aſſumeret, aſſerens pacem Eccleſiæ Anglicanæ nunquam ſine gladio materiali poſſe firmari.* It was not the beſt Doctrine that this man could plant, by liberty or warre, when the firſt Church roſe by faſting and prayer.

Mat. Pariſ.

Wil. de Riſharger.

True Piety binds the Subject to deſire a good Soveraigne, but to beare with a bad one, and to take up the burthen of Princes with a bended knee, rather in time ſo to deſerve abatement, then reſiſt authority.

Church-

Church-men therefore ought not alwayes to leade us in the rule of Loyalty, but a knowledge of our owne duties, in difficult points of Religion, where an humble ignorance, is a safe and secure knowledge, wee may rely upon them.

To suppresse these troubles, and supply the Kings extremity, a Parliament was called, much to the liking of those Lords, who as little meant to releeve the King, as they did to acquiet the State, their end at that time being onely to open at home the poverty of their Master, to lessen his reputation abroad, and to brave out their owne passions freely, whil'st those times of liberty permit.

Barth. Coron.

Chron. Norwic.

Chron. Worc.

Here they began to tell him hee had wronged the publick State, in taking to his private election the Iustice, Chancellour, and Treasurer, that should bee onely by the Common Councell of the Realme, commending much the Bishop of *Chicester*, for denying delivery of the great Seale, but in Parliament where he received it.

M. Paris.

Wendover.

They

They blame him to have bestowed the best places of trust and benefit in his gift on Strangers, and to leave the *English* unrewarded, to have undone the trade of Merchants, by bringing in Maltolts and heavy customes, and to have hurt the Common liberty, by *non obstantes* in his Patents, to make good Monopolies for private favorites. *Wallingford. Paris. Wil de Rishanger.*

That hee hath taken from his Subjects, *Quicquid habuerunt in esculentis & poculentis Rusticorum emim equos bigas vina victualia ad libitum cepit.* *Chron. S. Albani.*

That his Iudges were sent in circuites, under pretext of Iustice, to fleece the people, *Causis fictitiis quoscunque poterant diripuerunt.*

And that Sir *Robert de Pursiowe* had wrong from the Borderers of his Forrest, under pretence of encrochments or assarts, great summes of money.

And therefore, they wonder, that hee should now demand reliefe from his so pilled and polled Commons, who *Gual. de Coventry.*

who by their former extremities; *Et per auxilia prius data ita depauperantur, ut nihil aut parum habeant in bonis.* And therefore adviſed him, that ſince his needleſſe expence, *Poſtquam regni cæpit eſſe dilapidatur*, was ſummed up by them to above 800000. l. It were fitting to pull from his favorites, who had gleaned the Treaſure of his Kingdome, and ſhared the old Lands of the Crowne, ſeeing one of them there, whom the Lords deſcribed to bee *Miles litteratus*, or *Clericus militaris*, who had in ſhort ſpace from the inheritance of an acre, growne to the Poſſeſſion of an Earledome; and *Manſel* another inferiour Clarke that (beſides 50. promotions with the cure of ſoules) roſe to diſpend in annuall revenue 4000. markes, whereas more moderate Fees would have become a pen-man, no better quallified then with the ordinary fruits of a writing Schoole; yet if a moderate ſupply would ſuite with the Kings occaſions, they were content to performe ſo farre

Wil de Riſharger.

Chron. Litchf.

Hiſt. Minor. Wil. de Riſharger. Epiſt. Robert. Lincolne.

farre reliefe in Obedience, as the deſert of his carriage ſhould merrit toward them: And ſo as the Record ſaith, *Dies datur ſuit in tres ſeptimanas ut interim Rex exceſſuos ſuos corrigeret, & Magnates voluntati ejus obtemperarent.* *Matth. Paris.*

At which day upon new grant of the great Charter, admittance to his Councell of ſome perſons elected by the Commons, and promiſe to rely upon his Natives, and not Strangers; for adviſe hereafter; they ſpare him ſuch a pittance as muſt tie him to their Devotion, for a new ſupply. *Regis Roſſen.* *Johan. de Wellingford.*

Thus Parliaments that before were ever a medicine to heale up any rupture in Princes fortunes, are now growne worſe then the mallady, ſith from thence more malignant humours beganne to raigne in them, then well compoſed tempers.

The King by this, experienced of the intents of his rebellious Lords, and finding that the want of Treaſure was the way whereby they inthralled *Chron. de Litchf.*

his Majesty, begins now to play the good husband closeth his hand of waſt, and resolves himselfe (too late) to stand alone, such experience is pernitious to the private, and dangerous to the publique good of a State, when it never learnes to doe, but by undoing, and never sees order, but when disorder shewes it. Yet still, alas, such was his flexibility, when hee came to bee pressed by his *French* Minions, that hee could not hold his hand any longer, from their vast desires, and endlesse waſt. So that an Authour then living, saith, it became a by-word, *Our inheritance is converted to Allien', and our houses to Strangers.* Followers to a King excessive in guifts, are excessive in demands, and cut them not out by reason, but by example: Favours past are not accompted, wee love no bounty but what is meerely future; the more that a Prince weakeneth himselfe in giving, the poorer hee is of friends: For such prodigality in a Soveraigne, ever ends in the rapine and spoile of his Subjects.

Yet

Yet before the King would againe ſubmit himſelfe, as hee had the laſt Parliament, to ſo many brave and ſtrict inquiries of his diſloyall Subjects, hee meaneth to paſſe through all the ſhifts, that extremity of need, with greatneſſe of mind could lay upon him. Hee beginneth firſt with ſale of Lands, and then of Iewels, pawneth *Gaſcoyne*, and after that, his Imperiall Crowne, and when hee had neither credit to borrow, (having ſo often failed, the truſt hee had made.) nor pawnes of his owne, hee then layeth to pawne the Iewels and Ornaments of St. *Edwards Shrine*; and in the end, not having meanes to defray the diet of his Court, was enforced to breake up houſe, (and as *Paris* ſaith) with his Queene and Children, *Cum Abbatibus & Prioribus ſatis humiliter Hoſpitia quæſivit & prandia.*

Claiſ. anno 46. & 47 Hen. 3.

Claiſ. anno 37. Hen. 3.

This low ebbe, which againe the Kings improvidence had brought him to, gave great aſſurance to the Rebellious Lords, that they ſhould now at the laſt, have the Soveraigne

power, left a prey to their ambitious deſignes, and to bring it faſter on, they deſire nothing more, then to ſee the Kings extremity: Conſtraine a Parliament, for at ſuch times, Princes are ever leſſe then they ſhould bee, Subjects more.

Wil. de Riſhanger. To haſten on the time, and adapt the meanes, there are ſowne certaine ſeditious rumours, that the Kings neceſſity muſt repaire it ſelfe upon the fortunes and bleſſings of his people, that having nothing of his owne left, hee might and meant to take of others: For Kings may not want, as long as the Subjects have meanes to ſupply.

This tooke fire juſt to their minds, and wrought a little moving in the State, which doubtleſſe had flamed higher, if the King had not aſſwaged it by Proclamations, wherein hee declared, *Quod quidam malivoli ſiniſtra prædicantes, illis falſo ſuggeſſerant, illum velle eos indebite gravari,*

Clauſ. anno 49. lib. 3.

gravari, ac jura & libertates Regni subvertere, & per suggestiones illas dolosas & omnina falsas eorum corda à sua maledictione, & fidelitate averterent, but desireth, that, *Hujusmodi animorum suorum perturbationibus ne finem adhiberent*, for that hee was ever ready to defend them from the oppression of the great Lords, *Et omnia jura & consuetudinis eorum debitas bonas, & consuetas, in omnibus & per omnia plenius observare*, and that they may rest of this secure: *De voluntate sua libera litteras suas fecit patentes.* But seeing still, that Majesty and right subsist not without meanes and power, and himselfe had of neither, so much as would stop the present breach in his owne wants, or his Subjects loyalties, hee flieth to the bosome of his people, for reliefe and Councell.

At *Oxford* they met in Parliament, where his necessity, met so many undutifull demands, that hee was forced to render up to their Rebellious will, his Royall power. *Park. Oxon.*

Heere the Commons knowing that, *Quum elegere inceperunt*, they were *Loco libertatis*, stood with the King to have the managing of the State, put to the care of twenty foure, whereof twelve by their election, (whereto they looke strictly) and the other by him, who in all things else, was left a Cipher, and in this, whether by feare, or remissenes, filled up his number with *Mountford*, *Gloucester*, and *Spencer*, which besides the weakening of his owne part, wonne to those his late opposites, an opinion of great interest they had got in his favour, hee now hath left neither election of publick office, nor private attendants, his halfe brethren and their followers, hee must dispoile of all fortune, and exile by prescription under his owne hand, commanding his writs, *Pro transportatione fratrum suorum*, to bee directed to the Earles of *Hartford* and *Surrey*, and not to passe either their Money, Armes, or Ornaments, *Nisi in forma quàm dicti Comites injunxerent*, and after their departure

Matth. Paris. Chron. Were.

Chron. Litchf.

ture enjoyned the men of *Briſtoll*, that they ſhould not permit any Strangers, *Sive propinquos Regis appliçare in portu*, but ſo to behave themſelves therein, that as well the King, *Quàm Magates ſui eos merito debeant commendare.* *Clauſ. anno 49. Hen. 3.*

Thus wee ſee, how eaſily mens eſtates doe change in a moment, and how hard it is to make uſe of all things ill gotten.

Richard elect of the Empire, the Kings full brother, and then beyond Sea, muſt bee wrought by letter, as his free deſire to confirme by oath thoſe former reſtrictions of regall power; which though performed, yet would the Lords ſuffer neither the one or the other, to enter *Dover* Caſtle (the key of the Kingdome) which they had furniſhed, as moſt of the other Fortes of reputation in the Realme with Guardians of their owne, ſworne reſpectively to the State; and then taking the like aſſurance of all the Shrieffes, Bailiffes, Coroners, and other publick Miniſters, ſearching the *Chron. S. Albani.* *Regis Rtſſin.*

Rot. in Scrio. Wil. de Rishanger.

behaviour of many by strict Commission upon oath, to winne opinion in shew among the Vulgar, who groaned under their late Extortions, whereas their end was truly, as it after proved, by displacing the faithfull servants of the King, to open a way, to their owne dependants.

Thus changing sole power into the rule of many, and those by popular election, made the State beleeve, that this forme of limited policy, they had utterly suppressed the mind of man, for ever dreaming more upon the imaginary humours of licencious Soveraignty: But it fell out nothing so, for now every man beganne to estimate his owne worth, and to hammer his head on every designe, that might enlarge his power and command.

Then beganne the great men to rent from the body of the Crownes, and regall Signiories, all such royall Suitours as neighboured any of their owne seats, whereto they enforce their service,

Scacar.

service, and so (as the Record saith) *Ad sectas indebitas, & servitutes intollerabiles subditos Regis compulerunt*; Thus raising meane manners to become great Honours, and renting a sunder the regall Iustice, they made themselves of so many Subjects whil'st they lived in duty, *Totidem Tiranni* (as the booke of Saint *Albans* saith) when they had left their loyalty, *Magnas induxerunt Magnates Regni, super subditos Regis servitutes & oppressiones*, which they bore patiently; for excesse of misery having no ease but Custome, made men willing to lay the foundation of servitude by the length of sufferance, which found no ease or end, untill the quiet of this Kings raigne.

Rot. Regis in Scbod. 56. H. 3.

Mountford, *Glocester*, and *Dispencer*, the heads of this Rebellious designe, having by the late provisions drawne to the hands of the twenty foure *Tribunes*, of the people, the entire mannaging of the Royall State, and finding that power too much disperced, toworke the end of their

Wallingford.

desires

desires, forst againe the King to call a Parliament, where they delivered over the authority of the twenty foure unto themselves, and create a *Triumvirate, non constituenda Republicæ causa*, as they first pretended, for their owne ends, and so in the interest of some private contented, the publike was stayed; but to make a speedier way to one of them as it fatally did, to become *Dictator perpetuus*: Ambition is never so high, but shee thinkes still to mount, that station which seemed lately the top, is but a step to her now, and what before was great in desiring, seemes little being once in power.

Wil. de Risharger.

Chron. de Dunst.

These three, elect nine Councellours, and appoint, *Quod tres ad minus alternatim semper in curia sint*, to dispose of the custody of Castles, *Et de aliis Regni negotiis*, the chiefe Iustice, Chancellour, and Treasurer, with all offices, *Majores & minores*, they reserve the choyce of to themselves, and bind the King to this hard bargaine upon such strong security, that hee

Ordinat. inter Rec. Lond.

hee is contented under the great Seale, and Oath, to loose to them the knot of Regall duty, whensoever hee assumeth to himselfe his Regall dignity, *Liceat omnibus de Regno nostro contra nos, insurgere & ad gravamen nostrum opem & operam date at sinobis in nullo tenerentur.* This prodigy of fortune of whom shee had set a pittifull example of her inconstancy, finding no part of his Soveraignty left, but the bare Title, and that at their leave, beggeth succour from *Vrbane* the fourth, against his disloyall Subjects. *Chron. Origin. sub sgille.*

The Pope by his Bull cancelleth his Oath, and contract, and armed him with Excommunications against all those that returne not with speed, to their due and old obedience, since promises made by men, which cannot say they are at liberty, are weake, and force hath no power to make just interest.

The Lords on the other side, that had imped their wings with Eagles feathers, and liked no game now, but what was raked out of the ashes of Monar- *Chron. Luchf. Wil. de Rishanger.*

Monarchy, made head against their Soveraigne, and to mate him the better, called in aid, some *French* forces: Thus the Common-wealth turned againe her sword into her owne bowels, and invited her ancient Enemy, to the funerall of her liberty, so that it was a wonder, shee should not at this time passe under a forraine servitude. And though these men were more truly sensible of their owne disgrace, then of others misery: Yet found they no better pretext for private interest then that of the publick.

Chr. Britanniæ.

Chron. Dunst.

And therefore at the entry of this Warre, they cried liberty, although when they came neere to an end, they never spake word of it.

At *Lewis* the Armies met, where the King endeavours a reconciliation, but in vaine, for perswasions are ever unprofitable, when Iustice is inferiour to force.

Wil. de Risberger.

The sword decides the difference, and gave the two Kings, and their eldest Sonnes Prisoners. The person now as well as the regall power, thus in

in the hands of *Mountford* and *Glocester*, found neither bound of ſecurity, nor expectation of liberty, but what the emulous competition of greatneſſe (which now beganne to breake out betweene theſe mighty Rivals,) gave hope of, for *Leyceſter* meaning by ingroſſing from his partner, to himſelfe, the perſon of the King, and to his followers the beſt portion of the ſpoile, to draw more fruit from this advantage, then it ſhould in fellowſhip yeeld, diſſolved the knot of all their amity.

Thus equall Authority with the ſame power, is ever fatall (wee ſee) to all great actions: For to fit minds to ſo even a temper, that they ſhould not have ſome motions of diſſenting is impoſſible.

Mountford having thus broken all faith with his confederates, and duty to his Soveraigne, left the path of moderation and wiſedome, to come to the King, by that of pride and diſtruſt. To him he telleth, that his armes and ends had no other object ever but

but order of the State, and eaſe of the people, that hee did not in this, carry affection againſt duty, but well knew how to reine his deſires, to his juſt power, and ſo no leſſe to his Majeſties content, if hee would bee ruled; which was to command the Fortes and Caſtles of his now oppoſite *Gloceſter*, and the reſt into his hands. It was hard to this King thus to take a Law from his inferiour, but neceſſity in Soveraigne affaires doth often force away all formality; and therefore this poore Prince, who now at the Victors diſcretion, ſeemed to have beene onely raiſed to ſhew the inconſtancy of fortune and vanity of man, ſuited himſelfe with incomparable wiſedome according to the neceſſity of the time; Neither did humility wrong Majeſty, when there was no other meanes to containe Spirits ſo inſolent, but diſſembling. Hee therefore ſummoneth in his owne perſon the forts of his faſteſt friends, to yeeld to his greateſt enemies. This hee enters in ſhew as his lod-

lodging, but in effect his priſon, and ſaw himſelfe forced to arme againſt his friends, and to receive now Law from him, to whom hee lately thought to give it. Thus *Leyceſter* is become a darling of the Common rout, who eaſily change to every new Maſter, but the beſt durſt not ſaile along his fortune, by the light of his glory: Chriſtall that fairely gliſtereth doth eaſily breake, and as the aſcent of uſurping royalty is ſlippery, ſo the top is ſhaking, and the fall fearefull. To hold this man then at the entry of his falſe felicity fully happy, was but to give the name of the Image, to the mettle that was not yet molten, for by this, the impriſoned Prince was eſcaped, and faſt aſſured of *Gloceſter*, by the knot of his great mind, and diſcontent, and both with the torne remainder of the loyall Army united, and by ſpeedy march arrived unlooked for, neere *Eveſham*, to the unarmed troupes of the ſecure Rebels, whom they inſtantly aſſailed, for it was no fit ſeaſon to give time, when no

no time did assure so much, as expedition did promise.

Dispencer and other Lords of that faction, made towards the King, with the best speed for mercy, but could not breake out, being hurried along the storme of the giddy multitude.

Publick motions depends on the conduct of Fortune; private on our owne carriage, we must beware of running downe steep hils, with weighty bodies, they once in motion, *Suo feruntur pondere*, stops are not then voluntary; but *Leyceſter* at that instant with the King, and out of the storme might have escaped, if his courage and hope had not made him more resolute by misfortune, so that hee could neither forsake his followers, nor his ambition; thus making adversity the exercise of his vertue, hee came and fell.

The King by the blessed Fortune freed, and obeyed, beganne to search the ground of his former

misery

misery, and why that Vertue and Fortune that had so long setled and maintained under his Ancestors the glory of his Empire, had cast her in his time off, and conspired with her Enemies, to her almost ruine, as if the *Genius* of the state had quite forsooke her; Here hee finds his wastfull hand had beene too quick, both over the fortunes and the blessings of his People, the griping Avarice of his Civill Ministers and lawlesse liberty of his Martiall followers, the neglect of grace, and breach of his word, to have lost his Nobility at home, and necessity, his Reputation abroad, by making Merchandize of peace, and warre, as his last refuge; so leaving his old Allies became enforced to betake himselfe to persons doubtfull, or injured, and that by giving over himselfe to a sensuall security and referring all to base greedy and unworthy Ministers, whose Councels were ever more subtle then substantiall, hee had throwne downe those pillars

Rot. part. 53. H. 3. M. 51. Rishanger.

pillars of soveraignety, and safety, Reputation abroad, and Reverence at home.

Jo. Tuxeter, Mon. Bury.

Hee now therefore making sweetnesse and clemency the entrances of his regained Rule for the faults of most of the late Rebels hee forgot, a gracious kind of pardoning, not to take knowledge of offences, others hee forgot, that they might live but to the glory of his goodnesse, for the fewer killed, the more remaines to adorne the Trophee.

Rot. Cart. 52. 52. Hen. 3.

Tyrants shed bloud for pleasure, Kings for necessity, yet least his Iustice and power might too much suffer in his grace and mercy, some few hee punished by small fines, some by banishment, as the two guiltlesse, yet unpittied Sonnes of the Arch-traitour. Treason so hatefull is to the head, that it draweth (wee see in this,) the carriage of the innocent children into an everlasting suspect, and what is suspition in others is guilt in them: Vpon the constant followers of his broken fortunes hee bestowed, but

Clauf. 52. H. 3. M. 29.

with

with a more wary hand then before the forfeiture of his enemies: Immoderate liberality hee had found but a weake meanes to winne love, for it loſt more in the gathering then it gained in the giving. This bounty beſtowed without reſpect, was taken without grace. diſcredited the receiver and detracteth from the judgement of the giver, and blunted the appetites of ſuch, as carried their hopes out of vertue and ſervice: Thus at laſt, hee learned that reward and reprehenſion juſtly laid, doe ballance Government, and that it much importeth a Prince, the hand to bee equall that holdeth the ſcale. *Chron. Dunſt.*

In himſelfe, hee reformed his naturall errours, Princes manners, though a mute Law have more of life and vigour then thoſe of letters, and though hee did ſometimes touch upon the verge of vice, hee forbore ever after to enter the circle.

His court wherein at this time, the faults of great men did not onely by approbation, but Imitation receive true

true comfort, and authority; for their crimes now became examples, and customes, hee purged very judiciously and severely, since from thence proceeds either the regular or irregular condition of the Common state.

Ordinat. author. Reg. aulæ. Claus. 53. Hen. 3. Rishanger.

Expence of house hee measureth by the just Rule of his proper revenew, and was heard often to say, that his excesse of wast before had beene an issue of his Subjects bloud, the insolency of his Souldiers made lawlesse by the late liberties of Civill armes, hee spendeth in forraigne expedition. Having seene that the quiet Spirits underwent all the former Calamities, and the other never were satisfied but in the misery of Innocents, and would, if they had no enemies abroad seeke out at home, as they had done before.

Pat. 53. & 54. Hen. 3. Comment. de Trail. baston.

The rigour and corruption of his judiciall Officers hee examineth, and redresseth by strict Commission; For the fence of their severity, became a murmure of his owne cruelty.

The

The ſeats of Iudgement and Councell, hee filled up with men nobly borne. For ſuch attract with leſſe offence, the Generous ſpirits to reſpect and reverence. Their Abilities hee meaſureth not by favour, or by Private Information, as before, but by publike voice, for every man in particular may deceive and bee deceived, but no man can deceive all, nor all one.

And to diſcover now his owne Capacity, and what part hee meaneth to beare hereafter in all deliberate Expeditions, hee ſitteth himſelfe in Councell dayly, and diſpoſeth affaires of moſt weight in his owne perſon. For Councellours bee they never ſo wiſe or worthy, are but as acceſſaries, not principals, in ſuſtentation of the State; their Office muſt bee ſubjection, not fellowſhip, in conſiderations of moment, and to have ability to adviſe, not authority to reſolve.

For as to live, the Prince muſt have a particular ſoule ſo to rule his proper

proper and interne Councell; without the one hee can never bee truly man, without the other, hee ſhall never bee ſecurely a Prince; for it offendeth as well the Miniſter of (merit) as the people to force obedience to one uncapable of his owne greatneſſe, or unworthy of his fortunes. This wonderfull change to the generall State (ſo hopeleſſe lately to recover her former liberty, they ſought now for nothing but the mildeſt ſervitude) brought them home againe with admiration to his devotion and their owne duty.

Hee that will lay (wee ſee) the foundation of greatneſſe upon popular love, muſt give them eaſe and Iuſtice, for they meaſure the bond of their obedience, by the good alwayes that they receive.

Barth. Con. Ibron. Iorwic.

This peace attended ever after his age and hearſe, and hee happily lived to faſhion his Sonne and Succeſſour, and to make him Partner of his owne experience and authority; whoſe owne hard education training him

him from that intemperance, which makes men inferiour to beasts: framed him to affect glory, and vertue; which made him superiour to men. So that all the Actions of his future Raigne were exact grounds of Discipline, and Policy; for his best successour to rule by after, who as hee was the first of his name since the Conquest, so was hee the first that setled the Law and State, deserving the Stile of *Englands Iustinian*, and freed this Kingdome from the wardship of the Peeres, shewing himselfe in all his Actions after, capable to Command not the Realme onely, but the whole World.

Thus doe the wrongs of our Enemies more then our owne discretions, make us sometimes both wise and fortunate.

FINIS.

Illustrissimo & Honoratissimo

ROBERTO

Comiti *Essexiæ* & *Ewe*, Comiti Marescallo *Angliæ*, Vicecomiti *Herefordiæ*, & *Bourchier*: Baroni Ferrariis de *Chartley*, Domino *Bourchier* & *Loven*: Regiæ Majestatis *Hippocomo*: Machinarum bellicarum Præfecto: *Academiæ Cantabrigiensis* Cancellario: Ordinis *Georgianii* Equiti aurato; Serenissimæ Domino *Reginæ* à sanctioribus Consiliis; Domino meo plurimum observando.

Ἀρίστῳ καὶ γενναιοτάτῳ: *Optimo & Noblissimo* (*inquit* Euripides) *ex qua sententia tu primus ac solus fere occurrebas* (*illustrissime comes*)

cujus nomen si Henrici *nostri fronti radiaret, ipse & letior & tutior in vulgus prodiret. Magnus siquidem es, & presenti judicio, & futuri temporis expectatione: in quo, veluti recuperasse nunc oculos, cæca prius fortuna videri potest; Dum cumulare honoribus eum gisti, qui omnibus virtutibus est insignitus. Hunc igitur si lata fronte excipere digneris, sub nominis tui umbra (tanquam sub* Ajacis *clipio* Teucer *ille* Homericus) *tutissime latebit. Deus opt. max. celsitudinem tuam nobis, reique publicæ diu servet incolumem: quo nos viz. tam fide quàm armis potenti tua dextra defensi, ultique, diutina cum securitate tum gloria perfruamur.*

Honori tuo devotissimus.

I. Hayvvard.

A. P. *To the Reader.*

AMong all sorts of humane Writers, there is none that have done more profit, or deserved greater praise, then they who have committed to faithfull records of Histories, either the Government of mighty States, or the lives and acts of famous men: for by describing the order and passages of these two, and what events hath followed, what counsailes they have set forth unto us, not onely precepts, but lively patternes, both for private dire-

ctions and for affaires of State: whereby in ſhort time young-men may be inſtructed, and old men more fully furniſhed with experience then the longeſt age of man can afford. And therefore *Cicero* reporteth that *L. Lucullus*, when hee went from *Rome* to make warre againſt *Mithridates*, was altogether unskilfull in Military ſervices: yet in the time of his Navigation hee ſo exerciſed himſelfe, what with conference, and what with reading of Hiſtories, that when hee came into *Aſia*, by the judgement and confeſſion of that great King, hee was preferred before all the Commanders that were before him. Hereupon when *Alexander Severus* did deliberate of any weighty matter, hee would eſpecially take adviſe of men skilfull

in

in Hiſtories, and not without good cauſe: for if (as *Afranius* ſaith) experience hath begot wiſedome, and memory as a Mother hath brought it forth; who are to bee better accompted then they whoſe memory is as it were a rich ſtore houſe, of the experiences not of one age or Countrey, but of all times and of all Nations. And therefore it is no great marvaile that *Zenobia*, who after the death of her Husband *Odonatus* tooke upon her the State, not onely inſulted upon the *Romaines*, but held the *Arabians*, the *Sarizens*, the *Armenians*, and other fierce and intractible people, in ſuch obedience, that although ſhee were both a woman and a *Barbarian*, yet they never ſtirred againſt her: for ſhee had perfectly read the *Romaine* Hiſtory in

Greeke, and alſo had her ſelfe abridged the *Alexandrian* and all the *Orientall* Hiſtories, whereby ſhee attained the higheſt pitch both of wiſedom and authority; for examples are of greater force to ſtirre unto vertue, then bare precepts, inſomuch as *Cicero* ſaid, that nothing could bee taught well without example. Therefore the *Lacedemonians* (as *Plutarch* writeth) did uſe upon feſtivall dayes to preſent unto their Sonnes certaine drunken ſlaves whom they called εἵλωτας: that by view of the vice, they might learne to avoid it; and *Hiſmenias* the *Thebane*, would ſhew to his Schollers, muſitians of all ſorts good and bad, inſtructing them to follow the one and not the other. And this is that which the *Apology* telleth of a certaine Coun-

Countrey-woman, who being hard favoured, and fearing leaſt ſhee ſhould bring forth children like her ſelfe, got many faire and beautifull pictures, which ſhee did dayly and ſtedfaſtly behold: the meaning whereof is, that by ſetting before us the acts and lives of excellent men, it is the readieſt way to faſhion our qualities according to the ſame.

Hereupon *Cicero* doth rightly call Hiſtory the witneſſe of times, the light of truth, the life of memory, and the meſſenger of antiquity. Hereby wee are armed againſt all the rage and raſhneſſe of Fortune: and hereby wee may ſeeme (in regard of the knowledge of things) to have travelled in all Countries, to have lived in all ages, and to have beene converſant in all affaires. Neither

is

is that the leaſt benefit of Hiſtory, that it preſerveth eternally, both the glory of good men, and ſhame of evill. Some Philoſophers doe deny, that glory is to bee deſired: for vertue (ſay they) is a reward unto it ſelfe, and muſt not bee reſpected for the vaine and titular blaſtes of glory: yet in writing theſe things, they affect that eſpecially, which they eſpecially deprave. And indeed there is no man hath ſo horny hart-ſtrings, (as *Perſius* ſpeaketh) who is not tickled with ſome pleaſure of praiſe, againe there is no man of ſo flinty a forehead, who is not touched with ſome feare of infamy and ſhame. Doe wee thinke that the valiant ſouldier thinketh no toile too tough, but boldly adventureth the hazard of all happes, becauſe hee is weary

weary of his life? death commeth by nature to all men alike, onely with difference of memory with posterity.

And I would thinke that Cities at the first were builded, Lawes made, and many things invented for the use of men, chiefly for desire of glory: which humour except the old Governours of Common-wealths, had thought necessary, they would never have fostered it as they did, with Garlandes, Statutes, Trophies and Triumphes, in which notwithstanding it is but temporary and short; but in Histories of worth it is onely perpetuall. This *Cicero* perceiving hee dealt with *Lucejus* to commit his actions to the monuments of his writings: and *Plinie* the younger did wish that hee might bee mentioned

ned in the Hiſtories of *Cornelius Tacitus*, becauſe hee did foreſee that they ſhould never decay.

But theſe are ſuch as are not led away with a luſt, either to flatter or to deface, whereby the credite of Hiſtory is quite overthrowne. Yet the endeavour to curry favour, is more eaſily diſliked, as bearing with it an open note of ſervility, and therefore, *Alexander* when hee heard *Ariſtobulus* read many things that hee had written of him farre above truth, as hee was ſailing the floud *Hidaſpis*, he threw the booke into the River, and ſaid, that hee was almoſt moved to ſend *Ariſtobulus* after for his ſervile dealing; but envious carping carrieth a counterfeit ſhew of liberty, and thereby findeth the better acceptance.

And

And ſince I am entred into this point, it may ſeeme not impertinent to write of the ſtile of a Hiſtory, what beginning, what continuance, and what meane is bee uſed in all matter, what things are to bee ſuppreſſed, what lightly touched, and what to bee treated at large: how credite may bee wonne, and ſuſpition avoided: what is to bee obſerved in the order of times, and deſcription of places, and other ſuch circumſtances of weight; wh t liberty a writer may uſe in framing ſpeeches, and in declaring the cauſes, counſailes, and events of things done: how farre hee muſt bend himſelfe to profit: and when and how hee may play upon pleaſure, but this were too large a field to enter into: therefore leaſt I ſhould runne into the fault of the

the *Mindians*, who made their gates wider then their towne, I will heere close up, onely wishing that all our *English* Histories were drawne out of the drosse of rude and barbarous *English*: that by pleasure in reading them, the profit in knowing them, might more easily bee attained.

THE

Henricus IIII. D. G. Rex
Ang: Fran: et Dom: Hib: etc.

Sould by Robt: Peake.

THE HISTORY OF THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF KING HENRY the fourth.

THe Noble and victorious Prince, King *Edward* the third, had his fortunate gift of a long and prosperous raigne over this Realme of *England*, much strengthened and adorned, by natures supply of seven goodly Sonnes. *Edward* his eldest Sonne, Prince of *Wales*, commonly called the Black

Black Prince: *William* of *Hatfield*: *Lyonel* Duke of *Clarence*: *John* of *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaster*: *Edmund* of *Langley*, Duke of *Yorke*: *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, Duke of *Glouceſter*: and *William* of *Windſore*. Theſe Sonnes, during the life of their renowned Father, were ſuch ornaments and ſuch ſtayes to his eſtate, as it ſeemed, no greater could bee annexed thereunto. For neither armies, nor ſtrong holds are ſo great defences to a Prince as the multitude of children: Fortes may decay, and forces decreaſe, and both decline and fall away, either by variety of fortune, or inconſtancy of mens deſires: but a mans owne bloud cleaveth cloſe unto him; not ſo much in the bliſſes of proſperity, which are equally imparted to others, as in the Croſſes of calamity, which touch none ſo neere, as thoſe that are neereſt by nature. But in ſucceeding times, they became in their off-ſpring, the ſeminary of diviſion and diſcord, to the utter ruine of their families, and great waſt and weakening of the whole Realme:

Realme: for they that have equall dignity of birth and bloud, can hardly ſtoope to termes of ſoveraignty, but upon every offer of occaſion will aſpire to endure, rather no equall then any ſuperiour, and for the moſt part, the hatred of thoſe that are neereſt in kind, is moſt diſpitefull and deadly if it once breake forth. The feare of this humour cauſed *Romulus*, to imbrew the foundations of the City and Empire of *Rome*, with the bloud of his brother *Remus*. According to which example, the Tyrants of *Turkie*, thoſe butchers of Sathan, doe commonly at this day begin their raigne, with the death and ſlaughter of all their brethren

Prince *Edward* the thunderbolt of Warre in his time, dyed during the life of his father. And although, hee was cut off in the middle courſe, and principall ſtrength of his age, yet in reſpect of honour and fame, hee lived with the longeſt, having in all parts fulfilled the meaſure of true Nobility. Hee left behind him a young Sonne called

called *Richard*, who after the death of King *Edward*, was crowned King in his ſtead, and afterward dyed childleſſe.

William of *Hatfield* King *Edwards* ſecond Sonne, dyed alſo without iſſue, leaving no other memory of his name, but the mention onely.

Lionel Duke of *Clarence*, the third Sonne of King *Edward*, was a man of comely perſonage, of ſpeech and pace ſtately, in other qualities of a middle temperature, neither to bee admitted nor contemned, as rather void of ill parts, then furniſhed with good. Hee had iſſue *Philip* his onely Daughter, who was joyned in marriage to *Edmund Mortimer*, Earle of *March*: Who in the Parliament holden in the eight yeare of the raigne of King *Richard*, was in the right of his Wife, declared Heire apparant to the Crowne, in caſe the King ſhould die without Children; but not many yeares after hee dyed, leaving iſſue by the ſaid *Philip*, *Roger Mortimer* Earle of *March*. This *Roger* was ſlaine in the rude and tumul-

tumultuous Warres of *Ireland*, and had issue *Edmund*, *Anne*, and *Elinor*, *Edmund* and *Elinor* died without issue. *Anne* was married to *Richard* Earle of *Cambridge*, Sonne to *Edmond* of *Langley* Duke of *Yorke*, the fift Sonne of King *Edward*. Of these two came *Richard Plantagenet* Duke of *Yorke*: who by the right devolved to him from his Mother, made open claime to the Crowne of *England*, (which was then possessed by the family of *Lancaster*) first by Law, in the Parliament holden the thirtieth yeare of the Raigne of King *Henry* the fixt: where either by right or by favour, his cause had such furtherance, that after King *Henry* should die, the Crown was entailed to him, and to the Heires of his bloud for ever. But the Duke impatient to linger in hope, chose rather to endure any danger, then such delay: Whereupon hee entred into armes soone after, against King *Henry* in the field. But being carried further by courage, then by force, hee could beare through, hee was slaine at the battaile

battaile of *Wakefield*, and left his title to *Edward* his eldeſt Sonne: who with invincible perſiſtance did proſecute the enterpriſe, and after great variety of fortune at the laſt atchieved it.

Iohn of *Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaſter*, the fourth Sonne of King *Edward* the third, was a man of high and hardy Spirit, but his fortune was many times not anſwerable, either to his force or to his forecaſt. Hee had two Sonnes *Henry* Earle of *Derby* (of whom I ſuppoſe chiefly to treat) and *Iohn* Earle of *Somerſet*. This *Iohn* was Father to *Iohn* Duke of *Somerſet*, who had iſsue *Margaret*, Counteſſe of *Richmond* mother to the Noble Prince, *Henry* the ſeventh.

Henry Plantagenet Earle of *Derby* was likewiſe by his Mother *Blanch*, extracted from the bloud of Kings, being diſcended from *Edmund*, the ſecond Sonne of King *Henry* the third: by which line, the Dutchy of *Lancaſter* did accreve unto his houſe. Hee was a man of meane ſtature, well proportioned, and formally com-

pact,

pact, of good ſtrength and agility of body, skilfull in armes, and of a ready diſpatch: joyntly ſhewing himſelfe both earneſt and adviſed in all his actions. Hee was quick and preſent in conceit, forward in attempt, courageous in execution, and moſt times fortunate in event. There was no great place of imployment and charge, which hee would not rather affect for glory, then refuſe either for perill, or for paines; and in ſervice hee often proved himſelfe not onely a skilfull Commander by giving directions: but alſo a good Souldier in uſing his weapon, adventuring further in perſon ſometimes, then policy would permit; his expences were liberall and honourable, yet not exceeding the meaſure of his receipts; hee was very courteous and familiar reſpectively towards all men. whereby hee procured great reputation and regard, eſpecially with thoſe of the meaner ſort: for high humilities take ſuch deepe roote in the mindes of the multitude, that they are more

ſtrongly

ſtrongly drawne by unprofitable curteſies then by churliſh benefits. In all the changes of his eſtate, hee was almoſt one and the ſame man: in adverſity never daunted, in proſperity never ſecure: retaining ſtill his Majeſty in the one, and his mildneſſe in the other: neither did the continuance of his raigne bring him to a proud port and ſtately eſteeming of himſelfe, but in his latter yeares hee remained ſo gentle and faire in carriage, that thereby chiefely hee did weare out the hatred that was borne him, for the death of King *Richard*. Hee could not lightly bee drawne into any cauſe, and was ſtiffe and conſtant in a good: Yet more eaſie to bee either corrupted or abuſed by flattering ſpeeches, then to bee terrified by threats. To ſome men hee ſeemed too greedy of glory, making ſmall difference of the meanes whereby hee attained it: and indeed this honour in noble minds is moſt hardly over-ruled, and oftentimes it draweth even the wiſeſt awry. But before I proceed any further in deſcri-

bing

bing either the qualities, or acts of this Earle, I muſt write ſomething of the Raigne of King *Richard* the ſecond, his Coſin *Germaine*: ſo farre forth as the follies of the one, were either cauſes or furtherances of the fortunes of the other.

Richard Sonne to *Edward* Prince of *Wales*, a little before deceaſed, was after the death of King *Edward* the third, crowned King over this Realme of *England*, in the eleventh yeare of his age: at which yeares the mind of man is like to the potters earth, apt to bee wrought into any faſhion, and which way ſoever it hardneth by cuſtome, it will ſooner breake then bend from the ſame. Now the governance of the King at the firſt was committed to certaine Biſhops, Earles, Barons, and Iuſtices. But either upon nicenes to diſcontent the King, or negligence to diſcharge their duty, every one was more ready with pleaſant conceits to delight him, then with profitable counſaile to doe him good:

for ſmooth and pleaſing ſpeeches need ſmall endeavour, and alwayes findeth favour: whereas to adviſe that which is meet, is a point of ſome paines, and many times a thankleſſe office. Hereupon two dangerous evils did enſue; flattery brake in, and private reſpects did paſſe under publike pretences.

In the third yeare of his Raigne, it was thought meete that this charge ſhould bee committed to one man, to avoid thereby the unneceſſary waſt of the Treaſure of the Realme, by allowing yearely ſtipend unto many. So by the whole conſent of the Nobility and Commons aſſembled together in Parliament, this office was deputed to Lord *Thomas Beauchampe* Earle of *Warwick*, and a competent penſion was aſſigned him, out of the Kings Exchequer for his paines. But the King being now plunged in pleaſure, did immoderately bend himſelfe to the favouring and advancing of certaine perſons, which were both reprovea-

ble

ble in life, and generally abhorred in all the Realme, and this was the cauſe of two great inconveniences: for many young Noble-men and brave Courtiers, having a nimble eye to the ſecret favours and diſlikes of the King, gave over themſelves to a diſſolute and diſhoneſt life, which findeth ſome followers when it findeth no furtherancers, much more when it doth flouriſh and thrive: the King alſo by favouring theſe, was himſelfe little favoured and loved of many: for it is oftentimes as dangerous to a Prince, to have evill and odious adherents, as to bee evill and odious himſelfe. The names of theſe men were *Alexander Nevill*, Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, *Robert Veere*, Earle of *Oxford*: *Michael Delapoole* afterwards Earle of *Suffolke*, *Robert Triſilian*, Lord chiefe Iuſtice, *Nicholas Brambre*, Alderman of *London*; and certaine others of no eminency, either by birth or deſert, but obſequious and pliable to the Kings youthfull humour.

Theſe were highly in credit with the King: theſe were alwayes next unto him, both in company and counſell: by theſe hee ordered his private actions: by theſe hee managed his affaires of ſtate: hee ſpared neither the dignity nor death of any man, whoſe authority and life withſtood their preferment. In ſo much as in the fifth yeare of his raigne, hee removed Sir *Richard Scroope*, from being Lord Chancellour of *England*, (to which office hee was by authority of Parliament appointed,) becauſe hee refuſed to ſet the great Seale, to the grant of certaine Lands, which had wantonly paſſed from the King: alleaging for his deniall, the great debts of the King, and ſmall demerites of the parties, upon whom the King might caſt away and conſume, but ſpend in good order hee could not; advertiſing him alſo to have reſpect, that riote did not deceive him under the terme and ſhew of liberality: and that gifts well ordered procure not ſo much love,

as placed without diſcretion, they ſtirre envy. This Chancelour was a man of notable integrity and diligence in his office, not ſcornefully turning away from the ragged coate of a poore ſuppliant, or pale face of a ſickly and feeble limmed ſuter, holding up their ſimple ſoiled bils of complaint, nor yet ſmothering his conſcience with partiall maintaining of ſuch as were mighty: but being alike to all, hee was ſoone diſliked of thoſe that were bad.

In the eight yeare of this Kings raigne, the deſtruction of the Duke of *Lancaſter* was intended likewiſe upon the like diſlike: the plot was laied by Iuſtice *Triſilian*, offences were deviſed, Appellours appointed, and Peeres named; hee ſhould have beene put under arreſt ſuddenly, and forthwith arraigned, condemned, and executed. But the Duke upon privy intelligences of theſe contrivances, fled to his Caſtle at *Pomfret*, and there made preparation for his defence againſt the King. So this mat-

ter beganne to grow to a head of diviſion, which the Common people at that time very buſily, deſired and ſought: but the Kings Mother travelling inceſſantly betweene the King and the Duke; (notwithſtanding ſhee was both corpulent and in yeares) laboured them both to a reconcilement: the King, with regard of the dangerous and diſcontented times: the Duke, with reſpect of his duty and faith: and ſo partly by her entreaty and adviſe, partly by their inclination bending to the ſafeſt courſe; all apparancy of diſpleaſure on the one part, and diſtruſt on the other, was for that time layed aſide.

The ſame yeare, *Michael Delapoole* was made Chancellour of *England*, and created Earle of *Suffolke*: and *Robert Veere* Earle of *Oxford*, was created Marqueſſe of *Dublin*, being the firſt man within the Realme that was enobled with that title. But as they grew in honour, ſo did they in hate: for many Noble-

men

men did infinitely ſtomack their undeſerved advancements, and with theſe the favour of the People generally went: but the Kings intemperate affection was peremptory and violent, not regarding envy untill hee could not reſiſt it.

The yeare next following, *Robert Veere* the new Marqueſſe, was created Duke of *Ireland*. This yeare, the Knights and Burgeſſes of Parliament, put up many complaints againſt the Earle of *Suffolke*, upon which they deſired his anſwers and triall: namely, how hee had abuſed the King in taking of him to farme all the profits and revenues of the Crowne: how wantonly hee waſted the treaſure of the land in riotous liberality, and unneceſſary charges: how deepe hee had dived into the Kings debt: how careleſſe and corrupt hee was in his office: how greatly hee had both deceived and diſcredited the King in certaine dealings and accounts particularly expreſſed: with divers other imputatious

touching diſhonour and diſhoneſty, both in private action and in office. This Earle was a Merchants Sonne in *London*, and growing mighty on the ſudden, hee could not governe himſelfe in the change: but proſperity layed open the ſecret faults of his mind, which were ſuppreſſed and cloaked before: and ſerving a weake Ruler in great place, with an ill mind, hee made open ſale of his Princes honour. Yet the King was willing, either ſecretly to diſſemble, or openly to remit theſe offences: and ſo paſſed them over with a ſhort audience (as his manner was in matters of greateſt weight) and without examination, ſhewing himſelfe neither grieved at the faults, nor well pleaſed with the complaint. Afterwards a Subſidy was required: but anſwer was made that this needed not, ſince the Kings wants might bee furniſhed with the debts which were owing him from his Chancelour: neither was it to any purpoſe, ſo long as the money

ney ſhould bee ordered by ſuch perſons as before it had beene, and that that time was like. Then were the matters againſt the Lord Chancellour againe ſet on foote, and the King perſwaded that it was neither honorable nor ſafe to beare him out; that to private men it was ſufficient if themſelves abſtaine from wrong, but a Prince muſt provide that none doe wrong under him: for by maintaining, or wincking at the vices of his Officers, hee maketh them his owne, and ſhall ſurely bee charged therewith when firſt occaſion doth ſerve againſt him. At the laſt, upon inſtant importunity of both Houſes, the King did conſent, that a commiſſion ſhould goe forth to certaine Noble-men, giving them authority to heare and determine all matters which were objected againſt the Lord Chancellour: and then was a Subſidie granted, with exception, that the money ſhould bee expended by the Lords, to the benefit and behalfe of the Realme. The King did

further demand, that the Heires of *Charles Bloyes*, who made claime to the Dutchy of *Britaine*, ſhould bee ſold to the *French-men* for thirty thouſand markes, and the money granted to the Duke of *Ireland*, for recovery of thoſe poſſeſſions which the King had given him in *Ireland*: this was likewiſe aſſented unto, upon condition, that before Eaſter the next enſuing, the Duke ſhould depart into *Ireland*, and there remaine: at ſo high a price did they value the riddance of him out of the Realme.

The charge of the Subſidie money, was committed to *Richard* Earle of *Arundell*. Commiſſioners for the Earle of *Suffolke* were appointed, *Thomas* Duke of *Gloceſter* the Kings Vncle, and the ſaid Earle of *Arundell*: but during the time of their proceeding, the King kept all off, in places farre diſtant: either to manifeſt thereby the diſcent of his mind, or to avoid the griefe which his neereneſſe would encreaſe: And now was the Chancellour left unto himſelfe,

ſelfe, to anſwere to thoſe demeanours, wherein hee made the Kings blind favour his priviledge and protection, ſuppoſing never to ſee the ſame either altered or over-ruled. In the end, being convict of many crimes and abuſes, hee was depoſed from his office, his goods were confiſcated to the Kings Exchequer, and himſelfe was adjudged worthy of death: Yet was execution ſubmitted to the Kings pleaſure, and under ſureties hee was permitted to goe at large. At the ſame time, *John Foorde* Biſhop of *Dureſme*, another of the Kings dainties, was removed alſo from being Lord Treaſurer of *England*, hee was a man of little depth, either in learning or wiſedome, but one that had the Art of ſeeming, in making the beſt ſhew of whatſoever hee ſpake or did: and riſing from meane eſtate to ſo high a pitch of honour, hee exerciſed the more exceſſively his riot, avarice, and ambition, not able to moderate the luſts and deſires which former want had kindled: When

When this businesse was blowne over, the King returned againe to *London*, and did presently receive the Earle of *Suffolke*, with the Duke of *Ireland*, and the Archbishop of *Yorke*, to greater grace and familiarity then at any time before. These *Triumvirs* did not cease to stirre up the Kings stomack against those Noblemen, whose speciall excellency had made matter of fame and regard: partly for the disgraces which they had received, partly upon malicious emulation, to see the other so favoured, and themselves so odious, and that their private choller and ambition might beare some shew of publike respect, they suggested unto the King, that hee was but halfe, yea not halfe a King in his owne Realme, but rather the shadow and picture of a King: for if wee respect (said they) matters of state, you beare the sword, but they sway it, you have the shew, but they the authority of a Prince, using your name as a colour and countenance to their pro-

proceeding, and your perſon as a cipher, to make them great, and bee your ſelfe nothing. Looke to the duty of your Subjects, and it is at their devotion: ſo that you can neither command nor demand any thing, but with ſuch exceptions and limitations as they pleaſe to impoſe: come now to your private actions, your liberality (the greateſt vertue in a Prince) is reſtrained, your expences meaſured, and your affections confined, to frowne and favour as they doe preſcribe. What Ward is ſo much under government of his Gardian? Wherein will they next, or can they more abridge you? Except they ſhould take from you the place, as they have done the power of a Prince: and in this wee thinke, they may juſtly bee feared, having ſo great might joyned with ſo great aſpiring minds. For power is never ſafe when it doth exceed: and ambition is like the Crocodile which groweth ſo long as hee liveth: or like the Ivie, which faſtning on the

foote

foote of the talleſt Tower, by ſmall, yet continuall riſing, at length will climbe above the top, it is already growne from a ſparke to a flame, from a twig to a tree, and high time it is, that the increaſe were ſtayed: oftentimes ſuch over-ruling of Princes have proceeded to their overthrowing, and ſuch cutting them ſhort hath turned to cutting them off, their minds are ſuſpicious, their power dangerous, and therefore the oportunity muſt bee prevented.

The Kings owne weakeneſſe made him apprehenſive, and framed his mind to a vaine and needleſſe feare: but chiefly hee was moved at the removing of his Chancellour and Treaſurer out of their offices, and of the Duke of *Ireland* out of the Realme, ſuppoſing it a reſtraint to his Princely power, that hee might not abſolutely and in things give or forgive as his pleaſure ſerved. When theſe privy incenſers perceived the Kings humour once

ſharp-

ſharpned, they ſo plied him with plauſible perſwaſions, that (although hee was naturally of no cruell diſpoſition, as wanting courage) yet they drew him to many violent and indirect courſes, partly upon negligence to ſearch out the truth, partly upon delight to bee flattered and ſmoothly uſed, neither did they long deferre their deviſes: and firſt it was appointed, that the Duke of *Gloceſter*, and certaine others of that part, ſhould bee invited to a ſupper within *London*, and there ſuddainly ſurpriſed and made away. Sir *Nicholas Brambre*, who the yeare before had beene Major of *London*, and in whom aboundance of wealth ſupplied the want of honeſt qualities, was a buſie agent in this butcherly buſineſſe: but *Richard Extone* the Major of the City, that yeare, diſcovered the practiſe by whom the Duke was warned both to avoid the preſent perill, and afterwards to bee wary of the like.

The yeare next following, *Richard* Earle

Earle of *Arundel*, and *Thomas Mowbray* Earle of *Nottingham*, had the conduct of a Navy committed to their charge: in this voyage they tooke above a hundred ſaile of the enemies ſhips fraughted with wines, and well appointed for fight: they alſo relieved and fortified *Breſt*, and tooke two forces which the *French-men* had raiſed againſt it. The Earles ſo behaved themſelves in this ſervice, that they grew to a very great eſtimation, both for courteſie among their Souldiers, and for courage againſt their enemies: and their actions were the more famous, by reaſon of the infortunate ſufficiency of other Commanders, by whoſe either raſhneſſe or cowardiſe, many good Souldiers were dayly defeated, and every yeare made notorious, by one loſſe or other. Yet notwithſtanding all their good labour and luck, they were at their returne, entertained by the King, with great ſtrangenes, both of countenance and ſpeech.

Who

Who was ſo unable to diſſemble his diſpight, that hee could hardly deferre it, untill the heat of the honour and love which they had wonne, were ſomewhat abated. So much are men more inclinable to revenge diſpleaſure, then reward defert: for it is troubleſome to bee gratefull, and many times chargeable: but revenge is pleaſant, and preferred before gaine.

About the ſame time, *Robert* Duke of *Ireland* forſooke the company of his lawfull wife, whoſe Mother Lady *Iſabel*, was Daughter to King *Edward* the third, and inſteed of her, hee tooke unto him a baſe *Bohemian*, a Taverners Daughter. The King little regarded this indignity done unto his Coſin, and in ſo great confuſion of the ſtate, let it paſſe unreproved, as overſhadowed with greater vices: but the Duke of *Glocester* her Vncle, tooke it in high diſdaine, as injurious to the Royall bloud, and did attend upon occaſion to worke revenge, this was not ſecret

cret from the Duke of *Ireland*, who likewise bent all his devises to bring the Duke of *Glocester* to his overthrow. The Duke of *Glocester* did profecute his enmity openly and manlike: the Duke of *Ireland* closely, and therefore the more dangerously. The Duke of *Glocester* was greater in bloud, the Duke of *Ireland* in favour, hee being Vncle to the King, this bearing himselfe as the Kings fellow. The Duke of *Glocester* pretended for the State, the Duke of *Ireland* for the King: and much private malice did passe under these publike shewes: but in opposition of such equall powers, there is many times small difference in harme.

And now was Easter past, the Tearme assigned to Duke *Robert Veere* for his departure into *Ireland*: and least his stay might breed some stirre within the Realme, hee still busied himselfe in preparation for his journey, and at last (although it were long) made a solemne shew of setting forth. The King went in great

great ſtate to accompany him to his ſhipping; and the Earle of *Suffolke* with Iuſtice *Triſilian*, and the reſidue of that faction, either for favour followed, for or feare durſt not ſtay behind. So they paſſed together into *Wales*, and (whether upon levity the Kings mind changed; or whether it was ſo contrived at the firſt to draw themſelves more ſeparate from the Lords,) there the Dukes journey was at an end. Then they entred into Counſell which way the Lords might beſt bee ſuppreſſed: many deviſes were deeply debated, all pleaſed without reſpect either of danger or diſgrace: but few ſtood with likelihood of event to their deſires, and therefore none was finally concluded. After long time thus frivolouſly ſpent, they left *Wales*, and came to the Caſtle of *Nottingham*, where the King cauſed the high Sheriffes of all the Shires in the Realme to bee called before him, and demanded of them, what ſtrength they could make on his part againſt the

the Lords, if need ſhould requ'r: their anſwer was, that the Common people did ſo favour the Lords, and were ſo well reſolved of their love and loyalty towards the King, that it was not in their power to raiſe any great power againſt them Then they were commanded that no Knights nor Burgeſſes ſhould afterwards bee choſen to any Parliament, but thoſe whom it pleaſed the King to appoint: whereto they ſaid that it was a hard matter in thoſe times of jealouſie and ſuſpition, to bereave the people of their ancient liberty, in choſing Knights and Burgeſſes for the Parliament, ſome few other matters being either unreaſonably required, or obtained to ſmall end, the Sheriffes were licenſed to depart. Then were aſſembled *Robert Triſilian*, chiefe Iuſtice of the Kings Bench, *Robert Belknape*, chiefe Iuſtice of the Common Pleas, *John Holte*, *Roger Stilthrope*, *William Burgh*, Knights and Iuſtices alſo of the Common Pleas, men learned in

one

one rule chiefly, without difference of truth or falſehood, to pleaſe thoſe in higheſt places, intituling that wiſedome, which indeed was but baſeneſſe and feebleneſſe of mind: thoſe were charged by the King upon their faith and legeance, to make true and full anſwers to thoſe queſtions following.

1 *Firſt, Whether the Statute, Ordinances, and Commiſſion, made and ſet forth the laſt Parliament, (whereby was meant the commiſſion againſt* Michael De-la-poole *Duke of* Suffolke) *did derogate from the Royall prerogative of the King.*

2 *Item, They who procured the ſaid Statute &c. to bee made and ſet forth, how are they to bee puniſhed?*

3 *Item, How are they to bee puniſhed, who provoked the King to conſent to the premiſes?*

4 *Item, What puniſhment have they deſerved who compelled the King to conſent to the ſaid ſtatute, &c.*

5 *Item, How are they to be puniſhed,*

who

who resisted or letted the King in exercising his Royall power, by remitting any penalties or debts whatsoever?

6 Item, When a Parliament is assembled, and the affaires of the Realme, and the cause of assembling the Parliament, by the Kings commandement declared, and common Articles limited by the King, upon which, the Lords and Commons in the said Parliament should proceed: if the Lords and Commons will proceed upon other Articles, and not upon the Articles limited by the King, untill the King hath first given answere to the Articles propounded by them, notwithstanding that the contrary were enjoyned by the King, whether in this case the King ought to have the rule of the Parliament, and so to order the fact, that the Lords and Commons should first proceed upon the Articles limited by the King, or that they should first have answer of the King, upon the Articles propounded by them, before they proceed any further?

7 Item,

7 *Item, Whether may the King when hee pleaſe diſſolve the Parliament, and command the Lords and Commons to depart or no?*

8 *Item, Since the King may at his pleaſure remove any of his Officers and Juſtices, and puniſh them for their offences: whether may the Lords and Commons without the Kings will, accuſe his Officers and Juſtices in Parliament for their offences, yea, or no?*

9 *Item, What puniſhment have they deſerved, who moved in Parliament, that the ſtatute whereby King* Edward Carnarvan *was depoſed ſhou'd bee brought forth, by view whereof, the new ſtatute ordinance and commiſſion aforeſaid were framed?*

10 *Item, Whether the judgement given in the laſt Parliament holden at* Weſtminſter, *againſt* Michael De-la-poole *Duke of* Suffolke, *was erronious and revocable, yea, or no?*

Theſe queſtions, or rather quarrels were drawne by *John Blake* a Coun-

Councellour at the Law, by direction of Iuſtice *Triſilian*, whileſt the King made his ſtay in *Wales*: to the which the Iuſtices afore-named, ſome in diſcharge of their owne malice, and ſome to ſatisfie the minds of other, made anſwer as followeth.

To the firſt, that they did derogate from the Prerogative of the King, becauſe they were againſt his will.

To the ſecond and third: that they are to bee puniſhed by death, except it pleaſeth the King to pardon them.

To the fourth and fifth: that they are worthy to bee puniſhed as Traytours.

To the ſixth: that whoſoever reſiſteth the Kings rule in that point, deſerveth to bee puniſhed as a Traytour.

To the ſeventh, that the King may at his pleaſure diſſolve the Parliament, and whoſoever ſhall afterwards proceed againſt the Kings mind,

mind, as in a Parliament, hee is worthy to bee puniſhed as a Traytour.

To the eighth, that they cannot, and whoſoever doth the contrary hee deſerveth to be puniſhed as a Traytour.

To the ninth, that as well the Motioner as alſo the Bringer of the ſaid ſtatute to the Parliament, are worthy to be puniſhed as Traytours.

To the tenth, they anſwered: that the ſaid judgement ſeemed to them erronious and revocable in every part. *In witneſſe whereof, the Juſtices aforeſaid, with* Iohn Locktone, *the Kings ſergeant at Law, have ſubſcribed and ſet their ſeals to theſe preſents, &c.*

When theſe bloudy ſentences of death & treaſon, were under generall and large Tearmes thus faſtened upon the Lords, the King ſuppoſed his attempts againſt them, whether by violence, or by colour of law ſufficiently warranted: but his power both wayes, as it was terrible againſt weak reſiſtance, ſo againſt ſuch mighty defendants it was of ſmal force to effect that wch he ſo much affected. Yet he

did not omit his firſt indeavour: and firſt accounting the Lords as condemned perſons, hee made diviſion of their Lands and goods among thoſe that hee favoured. Then hee waged Souldiers to bee in a readineſſe for his aſſiſtance, and ſent the Earle of *Northumberland* to arreſt the Earle of *Arundel*, at his Caſtle in *Reygate*, where hee then lay. But the Earle of *Arundel*, either upon advertiſement, or ſuſpition of the Kings mind, banded himſelfe ſo ſtrong, that when the Earle of *Northumberland* came unto him, hee diſſembled his intent, and left his purpoſe unperformed. Thus were theſe proceedings of the King, as now in Councell, ſo afterwards in event, not much unlike that which the Fable telleth of a certaine hunter, who firſt ſold the skinne of the beare, and then went about to take her: but when hee came within the forreſt, either by unskilfulneſſe or miſadventure, hee not onely miſſed his pray, but fell himſelfe into danger of the beaſt. The

The Duke of *Gloceſter* having ſecret intelligence of the Kings diſpleaſure, and of his drift, ſent the Biſhop of *London* to perſwade the King to entertaine a more favourable opinion of him: making faith to the Biſhop, with a ſolemne oath, that hee never intended any thing to the prejudice of the King, either in perſon or ſtate. The Biſhop not unskilfull to joyne profitable perſwaſion, with honeſt, declared to the King, that his diſpleaſure againſt the Lords was not grounded upon juſt deſert, but either upon falſe ſuggeſtions of their enemies, or erroni us miſtaking of ſome of their actions: how deſirous they were of his grace and favour: how faithfull and forward they promiſed to perſiſt in all dutifull ſervice: how honourable this agreement would bee to the King: how profitable to the Realme: and how dangerous to both, if theſe troubles might encreaſe. The King ſeemed to give good eare and credit to the Biſhops ſpeech:

but *Michael Delapoole*, a turbulent man, and againſt quiet counſell obſtinately contentious, ſtanding then by the King, ſoone ſtiffened his mind againſt all impreſſion of friendſhip. Hereupon contention did ariſe betweene the Biſhop and the Earle, and brake forth violently into heat of words. The Earle applied to the Lords thoſe objections wherewith great men are uſually charged: ſparing no ſpight of ſpeech, and uſing all art to aggravate matters againſt them. The Biſhop replied, that the Earle was thus fiercely bent, not upon his owne neceſſity, nor love to the King; but onely to ſatisfie his bloudy and ambitious humour, wherein hee was ſo immoderate that rather then the Lords ſhould not bee deſtroyed, hee would overwhelme them with the ruines of the State, for tumults might indeed bee raiſed by men of little courage, but muſt bee maintained with the hazard, and ended with the loſſe of the moſt valiant; that neither his Coun-

Counſell in this matter was to bee followed, being the principall firebrand of the diſturbance, nor his complants againſt any man to bee any thing regarded, being himſelfe a condemned perſon, and one that held both his life and honour at the pleaſure of the King. At theſe words the King was exceedingly wroth, and charged the Biſhop with menacing and threats to avoid his preſence. When the Duke of *Glouceſter* had knowledge hereof, hee ſignified the danger to the Earles of *Arundel*, *Warwick*, and *Derby*, adviſing them to take armes, and unite themſelves for their common defence: for in ſo doubtfull and ſuſpected peace, open warre was the onely way of ſafety. Theſe three Earles were the chiefeſt ſtrength to the ſide, but the Duke bare the moſt ſtroke, becauſe hee was moſt bold, and his greatneſſe almoſt obſcured the names of the reſt. On the other ſide, the King thinking ſeparate dealing the onely way to weaken a

confederacy, endeavoured to prevent the Lords in joyning of their forces: and to that end hee ſent a ſtrength of men with charge, either to ſet upon the Earle of *Arundel* where hee did lie: or to intercept him in his paſſage towards the Duke. But the Earle had travelled all the night before their comming, and ſo happily eſcaped to *Haringey* parke, where hee found the Duke, and the other Earles, with a ſufficient company, as well to make attempt, as to ſtand upon reſiſtance.

When the King heard hereof, hee was diſturbed and diſtracted in mind, being now in choiſe either to relent, or to reſiſt, whereof hee much diſdained the one, and diſtruſted the other. His followers alſo was divided in Counſell: ſome fretting at the diſgrace, and ſome fainting at the danger. The Archbiſhop of *Yorke* perſwaded the King, that occaſion was now offered to ſhew himſelfe a King indeed, if hee would muſter a Royall army, and by maine might beate

beate downe the boldneſſe of this preſumption. *Nihil dictu facilius*, ſaid another: *This is more readily deviſed then done*: the army againſt us is mighty, and the Commanders are great men, both for courage and ſkill, and greatly favoured of the Common people: whereby that which is accompted ſo ready pay, may chance to prove a deſperate debt. Therefore it were better with ſome yeelding to enter into conditions of quiet, then by ſtanding upon high points of honour to hazard the iſſue of a battaile, wherein the King cannot winne without his weakning, nor looſe without danger of his undoing. There was then in preſence, a certaine old Knight, called Sir *Hugh Lime*, a good ſouldier, but a very mad-cap, and one that lived chiefely upon the liberality of Noblemen; by vaine jeſtes, affecting the grace of a pleaſant conceit: of him the King demanded in mirth, what hee thought beſt to bee done? Sir *Hugh* ſwore, ſwownes and

ſnailes, let us ſet upon them, and kill every man and mothers child; and ſo wee ſhall make riddance of the beſt friends you have in the Realme, this giddy anſwer more weighed with the King then if it had beene ſpoken in grave and ſober ſort: and thus it often happeneth, that wiſedome is the more ſweetly ſwallowed when it is tempered with folly, and earneſt is the leſſe offenſive, if it bee delivered in jeſt. In the end, the deviſe of raiſing armes was laid aſide, not as diſpleaſing (being ſo agreeable to former proceedings, but as deſpairing to prevaile thereby; and the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, with the Biſhop of *Ely* being Lord Chancellour, were ſent unto the Lords, to underſtand the cauſe of their aſſembly: anſwer was made, that it was for the ſafety of themſelves; the honour of the King, and the overthrow of them which ſought the overthrow of both. At the laſt it was concluded by mediation of the Biſhops, that the

the Lords ſhould come before the King at *Weſtminſter*, upon promiſe of his protection, and there have audience concerning their griefes: the Biſhop of *Ely* alſo making private ſaith, that hee would diſcover any danger that hee could diſcrie, a little before the time they ſhould come, the Biſhop of *Ely* ſent word of an await that was purpoſed to bee laid for them, at a place called the Mewes, neere *London*; adviſing them either to make ſtay, or to come prepared: but rather to make ſtay, leaſt further provocation might make reconcilement more hard, hereupon they came not at the time appointed, and the King marvailing at their failance, enquired the cauſe of the Biſhop of *Ely*: who anſwered, that the Lords found want of true meaning, and that they neither did, nor durſt repoſe aſſurance to the Kings word, which they ſaw to bee uſed as a meanes to entrap them, the King made the matter very ſtrange unto him, affirming with an oath

that hee was free from deceit, both in consent and knowledge: and in a great rage, hee commanded the Sheriffes of *London* to goe to the place, and slay all those whom they found there in wait. Whether this was but a countenance of his, or whether hee was not privy to the practice, it is not assuredly knowne, and indeed, the matter was not false, but the place mistaken: for Sir *Thomas Trivet*, and Sir *Nicholas Brambre* had assembled many armed men at *Westminster*, with direction to assault the Lords at their best advantage: but perceiving their deceit to bee discovered, they dissolved the company, and sent them secretly away to *London*.

Then the Lords, upon new faith for their security, came to the King at *Westminster*, and yet in faith they brought security with them, such troupes of men, as in a place where they were so intirely favoured, was able to defend them, in any suddaine tumult or danger: the King upon their

their comming entred into *Weſtminſter-Hall*, apparelled in his Royall robes: and when hee was placed in his ſeat, and had compoſed himſelfe to Majeſty and State, the Biſhop of *Ely*, Lord Chancellour, made a long Oration to the Lords in the Kings name. Wherein hee declared the heinouſneſſe of their offence, the greatneſſe of their perill, how eaſie a matter it had beene for the King to have levied a power ſufficient to deſtroy them; and yet for the generall ſpare of his Subjects bloud, and in particular favour to the Duke and other Lords, hee made choyce to encounter and overcome them, rather by friendſhip then by force: and therefore was willing, not onely to pardon their riot, but alſo to heare their grieſes, and in a peaceable and quiet manner to redreſſe them. The Lords alleadged for cauſes of their taking armes, firſt the neceſſity of their owne defence: ſecondly the love both of the King and of the Realme, whoſe fame and fortune did

did dayly decline, by meanes of certaine Traytours, who lived onely by the dishonours of the one, and decayes of the other, those whom they challenged for Traytours, were *Robert Veere* Duke of *Ireland*, *Alexander Nevill* Archbishop of *Yorke*, *Michael De-la-poole* Earle of *Suffolke*, *Robert Trisilian* Lord chiefe Iustice; Sir *Nicholas Brambre*, and certaine others, somewhat secreter, but nothing better: and to justifie this appeale, they threw downe their gloves, and offered themselves to the triall by combat. The King replied, that oftentimes the causes of actions being good, yet, if the meanes want moderation, and judgement, the events prove pernitious: and therefore, though these complaints were true, yet were these courses not tollerable, which did beare an open face of rebellion, and by licentiousnesse of the multitude, might soone have sorted to such an end: for it is more easie to raise the people, then to rule them: whose fury once stirred, will common-

commonly bee diſcharged ſome wayes. But (ſaid hee) ſince wee have broken this broile, wee will not by combating give occaſion of a new: but at the next Parliament (which hee appointed ſhould beginne the third day of *February* then next enſuing) as well you, as they, ſhall bee preſent, and juſtice indifferently done unto all. In the meane time, hee tooke all parties into his protection, that none ſhould endanger or endammage another: deſiring the Lords to beare in mind, that as Princes muſt not rule without limitation, ſo Subjects muſt uſe a meane in their liberty. Then hee cauſed the Duke and the Earles, which all this time kneeled before him, to ariſe, and went with them into his private Chamber, where they talked a while, and drunke familiarly together, and afterwards, with a moſt friendly farewell hee licenſed them to depart. They of the contrary faction were not preſent at this meeting, and if they had, it

Craſtino Purificationis.

it was thought, that the presence of the King should little have protected them.

This act of the King was divers wayes taken: some judged him fearefull; others moderate, rather in sparing the bloud of his Subjects. The Lords were very joyfull of his good will and favour, which as by base or bad meanes they would not seeke, so being well gotten, they did highly esteeme. Yet they thought it the safest course, not to separate themselves, suspecting the mutability of the King, and the malice of their enemies, of whom they knew neither where they were, nor what they did intend: and being men of great wealth, and great power, and greatly bent to hurtfull practices, they were feared not without a cause: for the Duke of *Ireland*, either by setting on, or sufferance of the King, was all this time mustering of Souldiers out of *Chesshire* and *Wales*, where hee gathered an army both for number, and goodnesse of men

suffi-

ſufficient, if another had beene generall, to have maintained the ſide.

When the Lords were advertiſed hereof, they devided themſelves, and beſet all the wayes by which the Duke ſhould paſſe to *London*; determining to encounter him, before hee did increaſe his power, and countenance his actions with the puiſſance or name of the King. At the laſt hee was met by the Earle of *Derby*, at a place called *Babbelake* neere to *Burford*: and there the Earle put his men in array, reſolving with great boldneſſe to hazard the battaile, his Souldiers alſo were full of courage and heart, diſliking nothing more then delay, as a looſing of time, and a hinderance to the victory: but the Duke, being a man not fit for action, yet mutinous, and more apt to ſtirre ſtrife, then able to ſtint it: upon newes of an enemy would preſently have fled. There was then in the army a principall Commander, one Sir *Thomas Molineux*, Conſtable of *Cheſhire*, a man

man of great wealth, and of good proofe in ſervice, upon whoſe leading all that Countrey did depend: hee perſwaded the Duke, that this was but a part of the forces that were againſt them, and led onely by the Earle of *Derby*, a man of no ſpeciall name (at that time) among the Lords, and if they could not beare through that reſiſtance, it was but in vaine to attempt any great atchevement by armes. Hereupon the Duke ſtayed his ſteps, but his faint Spirits were moved by this ſpeech, rather to deſire victory then to hope it: his ſouldiers alſo were dull, ſilent, and ſad, and ſuch as were readier to interpret, then to execute the Captaines commandement. So they joyned battell, but ſcarce tenne ounces of bloud was loſt on both ſides, before the Duke of *Ireland* ſet ſpurres to his horſe, and forſooke the field. His ſouldiers ſeeing this, threw away their unfortunate weapons, more for indignation then for feare, ruffling their ranks, and yeelding to the Earle the

the honour of the field. Sir *Thomas Molineux* in flying away, was forced to take a River which was neere, and as hee was comming foorth againe, a certaine Knight, whoſe name was Sir *Thomas Mortimer*, pulled off his helmet, and ſtabbed him into the braines with his dagger. The reſt ſubmitted themſelves to the diſcretion of the Victorers, making them Lords over their life, and death: but their yeelding was no ſooner offered, then it was accepted, the Earle preſently commanding that none ſhould bee harmed, but thoſe that did make reſiſtance, or beare armour: The ſouldiers alſo being willing to ſhew favour towards their Countrey-men, as led into this action, partly upon ſimplicity, partly to accompany theſe which came upon feare. Then the Gentlemen were ſtill retained in the Earles company, the common Souldiours were diſpoiled of their armour onely, and ſo returned againe to their peaceable buſineſſe at home.

And

And this was the firſt act whereby reputation did riſe to the ſide, and the greatneſſe beganne, whereunto the Earle afterwards attained.

The Duke of *Ireland*, at the beginning of his flight, was deſirous to have paſſed the River which ranne by: and comming to a bridge, hee found the ſame broken: from thence hee poſted to another bridge, which hee found guarded with Archers. At the laſt, his fearefulneſſe being feared away (as nothing maketh men more deſperate upon a doubtfull danger, then feare of that which is certaine) hee adventured to take the ſtreame; in the midſt whereof hee forſooke his horſe and ſwam to the other ſide, and ſo by benefit of the night eſcaped, and flied into *Scotland*: and ſhortly after paſſed the Seas into *Flanders*, and from thence travelled into *France*: where the continuall gall of his griefe ſoone brought his loathed life to an end. His horſe was taken with his breſt-

plate,

plate, his helmet and his gauntlets, whereupon it was generally ſuppoſed that hee was drowned; and (as in great uncertainties it often happeneth) ſome affirmed that they ſaw his death, which men either glad to heare, or not curious to ſearch, did eaſily beleeve: whether this were thus contrived of purpoſe, or fell ſo out by chance, it was a great meanes of his eſcape, by ſtaying the purſute after him, which otherwiſe had beene made. His coach alſo was taken, and certaine of the Kings letters found, wherein hee deſired the Duke to come to *London* with all the ſpeed and power hee could make, and hee would bee ready to dy in his defence; ſo unskilfull was hee in matter of government, that to pleaſure a few, hee regarded not the diſcontentment of all the reſt.

The Earle of *Suffolke*, upon this accident, ſhaved his beard, and in baſe and diſguiſed artire fled to *Calis*, and either for feare, or for ſhame, never after returned into *England*: he was a cruell

cruell ſpoiler, and a careleſſe ſpender, in Warre contemptible, in peace in-ſupportable, an enemy to all Counſaile of others, and in his owne conceit obſtinately contentious; of a good wit, and ready ſpeech both which hee abuſed, to the cunning commending of himſelfe, and crafty depraving of others: hee was leſſe loved but better heard of the King, then the Duke of *Ireland*: the more hurtfull man and the more hatefull: the Duke being charged with no great fault: but onely the Kings exceſſive favour, in their courſe of good and bad fortune, both of them were famous alike. Alſo the Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, Iuſtice *Triſilian*, and others of that faction, ranne every man, like connies to their covert; Yea, the King betooke himſelfe to the Tower of *London*, and there made proviſion for his Winter aboad; having all his courſes now croſſed, firſt raſhnes in taking armes, and afterwards by cowardiſe in maintaining them.

The

The Earle of *Darby* ſignified this ſucceſſe to his aſſociates by letters, yet without any vanting or enlarging Tearmes: his ſpeeches alſo were moderate, rather extenuating his fact then extolling it, but by ſtopping his fame, it much encreaſed when men eſteemed his high thoughts by his lowly words, and his conceit in great exploits, by his contempt of this. Then the Lords met, and marched together towards *London*, whither they came upon Saint *Stephens* day, having almoſt forty thouſand men in their army, and firſt they ſhewed themſelves in battaile array, in the fields neare unto the Tower, within the view of the King: afterwards, they tooke up their lodgings in the Suburbs, the Major and Aldermen of the City came forth, and gave liberall allowance of victuall to the ſouldiers, offering unto the Lords entertainement within the City, but they did not accept it.

Now this diſcord ſeemed to draw to

to a dangerous diſtraction of the Common-wealth; the vanquiſhed part being full of malice, and the Conquerours of preſumption: the one wanting power, the other right to command and rule. The Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and certaine others of the neutrality, fearing the ſequele, perſwaded the King to come to a treaty with the Lords: but hee made ſhew of very light regard of all theſe dealings; let them ſtay (ſaid hee) untill they have wearied themſelves with maintaining this multitude, and then I will talke further with them. When the Lords underſtood the drift of his deviſe, they beſet the *Thames*, and all other paſſages, and proteſted, that they would not depart untill they had talked with him to his face The King having neither ſtrength to reſiſt; nor ſcope to ſcape, conſented to a treaty, and to that end deſired the Lords to come to him into the Tower: but they refuſed that place of meeting, upon feare of falſe meaſure

ſure, untill the King permitted them to ſearch as diligently, and come as ſtrongly, as they thought it meet. So they came unto the King well guarded, and after a few could kindneſſes, and ſtrange ſalutations, they laid before him, his proceedings againſt them at *Nottingam*; his letters which he ſent to the Duke of *Ireland* contrary to his word, for the raiſing of armes againſt them: his agreement with the *French* King, for the yeelding up of *Calis* and other ſtrong holds which he poſſeſſed in thoſe parts: with divers other points of diſhonourable dealing and negligent government. What ſhould the King then have ſaid or done? all theſe matters were ſo evident, and ſo evill, that there was no place left either for deniall or defence. Therefore ingenuouſly, firſt with ſilence and patience, afterwards with teares hee confeſſed his errours. And certainely, the ſtiffe ſtomack of the Lords relented more to theſe luke warme drops then they

they would have done to his Cannon ſhot.

Then it was agreed, that the next day the King ſhould meet with them at *Weſtminſter*, and there treat further, both of theſe, and other neceſſary affaires of the Realme. So the Duke, and the reſt of the Lords departed, except the Earle of *Darby*, who ſtayed ſupper with the King, and all that time ſtayed him in his promiſed purpoſe: but when hee was alſo gone, ſome of the ſecret Counſailours, or Corrupters rather, and Abuſers of the King, whiſtled him in the eare, that his going to *Weſtminſter* was neither ſeemely nor ſafe, and would cauſe not onely to his perſon preſent danger and contempt, but alſo both abaſement and abridgement to his authority afterwards: The Kings mind was ſoone changed; but the Lords being now ſtirred, and feeling the Kings hand weake to governe the bridle, became the more vehement, and ſent him word, that if hee did jeofaile with them,

them, and not come according to appointment, they would chuſe another King, who ſhould have his Nobility in better regard. This peremptory meſſage ſo terrified the King, that hee not onely went to *Weſtminſter*, but ſuffered the Lords to doe there even what they would. So they cauſed him much againſt his liking, to remove out of the Court, *Alexander Nevill*, Archbiſhop of *Yorke*, *Iohn Foord*, Biſhop of *Duriſme*, Frier *Thomas Ruſhoke*, Biſhop of *Chicheſter*, the Kings Confeſſour: Likewiſe they removed the Lord *Scuch*, the Lord *Haringworth*, Lord *Burnel*, Lord *Beaumount*, Sir *Albred Veere*, Sir *Baldwine Bereford*, Sir *Richard Alderbury*, Sir *Iohn Worth*, Sir *Thomas Clifford*, and Sir *Iohn Lovell*, taking ſureties, for their appearance at the next Parliament. Alſo certaine Ladies were expelled the Court, and put under ſureties: to wit, the Lady *Mowen*, the Lady *Moling*, and the Lady *Poinings*, which was the wife of Sir *Iohn Woorth*. Furthermore,

thermore, they arrested *Simon Burly*, *William Elinghame*, *John Salisbury*, *Thomas Trivet*, *Iames Berneis*, *Nicholas Dagworth*, and *Nicholas Brembre* Knights, *Richard Clifford*, *John Lincolne*, and *Richard Motford*, Clearkes, *John Beauchampe* the Kings Steward, *Nicholas Lake*, Deane of the Kings Chappell, and *John Blake* Counceller at the Law: all these were committed to divers Prisons, where they were forth-comming, but not comming forth, untill the Parliament next following.

1388. After the feast of the Purification, the Parliament beganne at *London*, (and yet the King used many means, either to dash or deferre the same) to which the Lords came, attended with the number and strength of a full army, upon colour to represse any riote that might happen to arise: but in truth, that by this terrour, they might draw the whole mannage of affaires unto themselves. This assembly continued untill Whitsuntide next following, with very great fear

of

of ſome men, and hope of others, and expectation of all. Herein was Iuſtice *Triſilian*, by counſaile of the Lords, againſt the Kings mind, condemned to bee drawne and hanged: which iudgement was preſently executed upon him: the like ſentence and execution paſſed upon Sir *Nicholas Brambre*, Sir *Iohn Salisbury*, Sir *James Barneis*, *Iohn Beauchampe*, the Kings Steward, and *Iohn Blake* Eſquire, who had framed the Articles which were exhibited againſt the Lords at *Nottingham*. Alſo the Iuſtices who gave their iudgement concerning thoſe Articles, *Robert Belknape*, *Iohn Holt*, *Roger Fulthrope*, and *William Burghe*, were condemned to perpetuall exile: and yet they did not enterpoſe themſelves, but intermeddle by conſtraint. Sir *Simon Burly* was alſo beheaded, who was Keeper of *Dover* Caſtle; and had conſpired to deliver the ſame unto the *Frenchmen*: hee was infinitely haughty and proud, equall to the meaneſt in vertue and wiſedome,

but in bravery and traine inferiour to no Duke. Divers other were either put to death, or banished, and some (as it happened when the reine of fury is at large) without any great cause. The Earle of *Derby* furthered no mans death, but laboured very instantly for the life and liberty of many, in so much as hot speeches did arise betwene the Duke of *Gloceſter* and him: whereby hee purchased a favourable opinion among those of the contrary part, having caused the death of no man, but onely in the field. Then was an oath exacted of the King, to stand to the Government of the Lords: and also a note was taken of all the Subjects within the Realme, to bee true and faithfull unto the King. The King in taking this oath of the Lords, bewrayed his inward conceit by his open countenance, looking pleasantly on those hee favoured, and angerly on those whom hee hated: by which untimely discovery, hee made them more heedefull, and himselfe more hate-

hatefull: which were occaſions afterward, both to prevent the revenge, which hee much deſired and to procure the miſchiefes which hee little feared. Laſtly, a ſubſidie was granted: and ſo the King comming, as it were, to a capitulation with the Lords, hee to have the name of a King, and they the Authority and Majeſty, the contention for that time ceaſed.

All this was done in the 11. yeare of the Kings raigne, hee being yet under age, and in Government of others. But the yeare following, hee beganne to take upon him more liberty and rule: and upon extreame diſdaine, that both his pleaſure and his power were by the Lords thus reſtrained, hee did ever after beare a hard mind againſt them. And firſt hee aſſembled them in the Councell Chamber, and there demanded of what yeares they tooke him to bee: they anſwered, that hee was ſomewhat above one and twenty; then (ſaid hee) I am of lawfull age to 1389.

have the regiment in mine owne hand, and therefore you doe mee wrong to hold mee ſtill under government, as though the condition of a King were harder then of a Subject. This the Lords were neither willing to grant, nor able to deny, and therefore they either kept ſilence, or ſpake little to the purpoſe. Well (ſaid the King,) ſince I am no longer an infant, I heere renounce your rule, and take upon mee ſuch free adminiſtration of the Realme, as the Kings thereof my Predeceſſours heretofore have lawfully uſed. Then preſently hee began his Phaetons flouriſh, and commanded the Biſhop of *Ely*, being Lord Chancellour, to reſigne his Seale; which the King received, and put up, and therewith departed out of the Chamber: but ſoone after hee returned againe, and delivered the ſame to *William Wickam* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, conſtituting him Lord Chancellour thereby. Many other officers hee likewiſe depoſed; and placed new in their

their roome; partly to manifeſt his authority, and partly to ſatisfie his diſpleaſure. Alſo hee removed the Duke of *Gloceſter*, the Earle of *Warwick*, and many others from his Privy Councell, and tooke thoſe in their places, which more regarded the humour of the King, but leſſe his honour.

Soone after, it was ſuggeſted to the King, that the Duke of *Gloceſter* was gathering forces againſt him: but upon examination there was found not onely no truth, but no ſhew or colour of any ſuch matter. The Duke would not quietly have diſgeſted the raiſing of theſe reports: but the King, whether upon a generall delight, to bee tickled in the eares with ſuch tales, or upon particular deſire to have ſome quarrell againſt the Duke, charged him to ſilence.

In the 13. yeare of the raigne of King *Richard*, the Citizens of *Genua* deſired his aid, againſt the Barbarians of *Afrike*, who with dayly 1390.

in-

incurſions infeſted and ſpoiled all the Sea coaſts and Ilands of *Italy*, and *France*, which fronted upon them. The King ſent a choyce company of Souldiers, under the conduct of *Henry* Earle of *Derby*; who behaved himſelfe in this charge with great integrity and courage, inciting his men, the good by praiſe, the bad by example, rather then reproofe, as more ready to commend the vertues of the one, then to upbraid the vices of the other. And firſt hee paſſed into *France*, and there joyned himſelfe to certaine *French* forces appointed likewiſe for this ſervice: then with might and minds united, they ſailed together into *Africk*. At their arrivall, the Barbarians were ready in armes to keepe them from landing: but the Earle commanded his Archers to breake through and make paſſage, deſpiſing the enemy, whom hee knew to bee weake and unskilfull in ſervice, and not to have that advantage in place, which hee had in men: the *Frenchmen* alſo

ſharp-

ſharply ſet in, and ſeconded the *Engliſh*: and ſo whileſt both companies contended, the one to bee accompted a helpe, and the other to ſeeme to need no helpe, the enemies were forced to flie, and leave the ſhoare unto the Chriſtians. In this conflict, three Dukes of the Barbarians and above three hundred Souldiers were ſlaine, and in the flight, foure Dukes were taken, and a great, yet uncertaine, number of Common people. Then the Chriſtians marched directly towards *Tunis*, the head City of that Country: this they beſieged, and in ſhort time tooke; chiefely by the proweſſe of the *Engliſh* ſouldiers, who firſt ſcaled the *Wales*, and reared thereon the Earles banner. When they were entred the Towne, the *Engliſhmen* bent their endeavour, to the houſing of their enemies, and beating downe of ſuch as made reſiſtance, but the *Frenchmen* ſtraight wayes turned to their laſcivious pleaſures, ſo that there was preſented a ſpectacle, both pitifull

and ſhameleſſe: in one place butchering of men, in another rioting with women: here ſtreames of bloud, and heapes of ſlaughtered bodies, hard by diſſolute and licentious wantonneſſes in ſome, all the miſeries of a cruell warre, and the looſeneſſe of a ſecure peace. Here were ſlaine and taken above foure thouſand Barbarians: the Kings brother alſo was ſlaine: but the King himſelfe fled into the Caſtle, which was ſtrongly ſcited, and well fortified and furniſhed with men. The Chriſtians laid ſiege to this Caſtle the ſpace of five weekes, during which time, they loſt many of their men, yet not by ſword, but by ſickneſſe: the Barbarians alſo were diſtreſſed with want of victuall, having but little proviſion, and many unprofitable mouths to conſume it; hereupon they ſent unto the Chriſtians, to deſire peace, offering them a great ſumme of money, to depart out of their Countrey: this the Chriſtians accepted, upon condition that they might alſo freely

carry

carry with them, all their pray and Priſoners; and that the Barbarians ſhould from thence forth ſurceaſe from making ſpoile, upon any of the coaſts of *Italy*, or *France*. Thus had this voyage a proſperous and ſpeedy end: the onely ſervice (as I ſuppoſe) which the *Engliſh* and *Frenchmen* performed together, without iotte of jarre. And yet the Earle abuſed not the fortune of this ſucceſſe, to vaine vanting, or braving in words, but moderately imparted to the reſt, the honour of the exploit: ſo by valiantly performing his charge, and ſparingly ſpeaking thereof, his glory encreaſed, without bit of envy.

In the fifteenth and ſixteenth yeares of the raigne of King *Richard*, certaine cauſes of diſcontentment did grow, betweene the King and the *Londoners*, which ſet the favour of the one, and the faith of the other, at great ſeparation and diſtance: One was, for that the King would have borrowed of them a thouſand pounds: 1392. 1393.

pounds: which they feeling much, and fearing more the Kings dayly exactions, did not onely deny, but evill intreated a certaine Lumbard, who offered to lay out the money.

Another griefe was thus occasioned: One of the Bishop of *Salisburis* servants, named *Romane*, meeting in *Fleet-street* with a Bakers man, bearing horse-bread, tooke a loafe out of his basket: and by rude demand of the one, and rough deniall of the other, chollar so kindled betwixt them, that *Romane* brake the Bakers head. Hereupon the Neighbours came forth, and would have arrested the Bishops lusty yeoman: but hee escaped, and fled to this Bishops house. The Constable followed peaceably, and demanded a quiet delivery of the Offendour: but the Bishops men shut the gates against him, that no man could come neere. Then much people flocked together, threatning to breake open the gates, and fire the house, unlesse *Romane* were

were brought forth unto them: What (ſaid they) are the Biſhops men priviledged? or is his houſe a Sanctuary? or will hee protect thoſe whom hee ought to puniſh? if wee may bee ſhuffled off in this ſort, not onely our ſtreets, but our ſhops and our houſes ſhall never bee free from violence and wrong. This wee will not endure: wee cannot: it ſtandeth not us in hand. Herewith they approached the gates, and beganne to uſe violence: but the Major and Sheriffes of the City, upon advertiſement of this tumult, came amongſt them, crying out, that it was not courage, but out-rage which they ſhewed: whereby they would procure, both danger to themſelves and diſpleaſure againſt the whole City; that although wrong had beene received, yet they were not in the men, nor this the meanes to redreſſe the ſame: So partly by their perſwaſions, partly by their preſence and authority, they repreſſed the riot, and ſent every man away, with ſtraight charge

charge to keepe the peace. Here was yet no great harme done, and the quarrell might have beene quieted without more adoe, had not the Bishops stirred therein, and kindled the coales of unkindneffe a fresh. For the *Londoners* at that time, were not onely suspected secretly, but openly noted to bee favourers and followers of *Wickliffes* opinions: for which cause, they were much maliced of the Bishops; and many of their actions interpreted, to proceed from another mind, and tend to a worse end, then was outwardly borne in countenance and shew: and some matters of chance, were taken as done of purpose. Therefore the Bishop of *Salisbury* called *John Waltham*, who was also Treasourer of *England*, made a grievous complaint of this attempt, to *Thomas Arundel* Archbishop of *Yorke*, and Lord Chancellour; affirming, that if upon every light pretence, the Citizens might bee suffered in this sort to insult upon the Bishops, without punishment,

niſhment, without reproofe and blame, they would bring into a hazard, not onely the dignity and ſtate, but the liberty alſo of the whole Church: did they not lately take upon them the puniſhment of adulteries, and other crimes appertaining to Eccleſiaſticall jurisdiction? maliciouſly alleaging, that the Biſhops and their Officers, either being infamous for thoſe vices themſelves, did winck at the ſame in others: or elſe by covetous commutation, did rather ſet them to ſale, then carefully repreſſe them. Did they not rudely and unreverently breake open the doores upon the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and interrupt his proceedings againſt *John Aſtone*, an open follower of *Wiskliffe*? and doe wee thinke that this is the laſt indignity that they will offer? no ſurely, nor yet the leaſt: and if this boldneſſe bee not beaten downe, our authority will fall into open contempt and ſcorne, and bee made a common foote ball, for every baſe Citizen to

ſpurne

ſpurne at. Hereupon they went together to the King, and ſo incenſed his diſpleaſure againſt the *Londoners*, (being prepared thereto by former provocations) that hee was in the mind to make ſpoile of the City, and utterly to deſtroy it. But being perſwaded to ſome more moderation: in revenge, firſt hee cauſed the Major and Sheriffes, and many of the chiefe Citizens to bee apprehended, and committed to divers ſeverall Priſons: then hee ceazed all the liberties of the City into his hands, and ordained, that no Major ſhould any more bee elected, but that the King ſhould at his pleaſure appoint a Warden and Governour over the City. This office was firſt committed to Sir *Edward Darlington*: who for his gentleneſſe towards the Citizens, was ſhortly after removed, and Sir *Bauldwine Radington* placed in his roome. Alſo the King was induced, or rather ſeduced by the Archbiſhop of *Yorke* Lord Chancellour, to remove the Feamies and Courts:

Courts: to wit, the Chancery, the Exchequer, the Kings bench, the hamper, and the Common pleas, from *London*, to bee kept at *Yorke*, where the ſame continued from Mid-ſommer in the yeare 1393. untill *Chriſtmaſſe* next following, to the great hinderance and decay of the City of *London*. At the laſt, the King upon earneſt intreaty of the Duke of *Lancaſter*, and the Duke of *Gloceſter*, called the *Londoners* before him at *Windſore*: where having firſt terrified them with the preſence and ſhew of a great number of armed men) hee cauſed all the priviledges of the City, both old and new, to bee brought forth, whereof hee reſtored ſome, and reſtrained the reſt: yet the *Londoners* were not fully reſtored to favour; neither recovered they at that time, either the perſon or dignity of their Major. Shortly after, the King went to *London*: at whoſe comming the Citizens changed all their griefe into gladneſſe (as the common ſort is

is without measure in both) entertaining him with such joyfull triumphes and rich presents, as if it had beene the day of his coronation. They supposed with these great curtesies and costs to have satisfied his displeasure; but they found themselves farre deceived: for they were not fully restored to their liberties againe, untill they had made fine to pay unto the King tenne thousand pounds. Thus did the *Londoners* manifest in themselves, a strange diversity of disposition, both licentiously to commit offence, and patiently to endure punishment; having rashnesse and rage so tempered with obedience, that they were easily punished, who could not possibly be ruled. Yet for this cause, so soone as first occasion did serve against the King; they shewed themselves, either his earnest enemies, or faint friends.

King *Richard* in the nineteenth yeare of his raigne, passed the Seas to *Calis*: the *French* King also came downe

downe to *Ard*: betweene which two Townes, a place was appointed, and tents erected for both the Kings to meet. After large expences on both ſides, and great honour done by the one King to the other: a ſurceaſe of armes was concluded betweene them for thirty years: and King *Richard* tooke to wife Lady *Iſabel*, the *French* Kings Daughter, being not above ſeven or eight yeares old. The Duke of *Gloceſter* was ſo offended; both with this friendſhip, and affinity, that hee loſt all manner of patience: exclaiming, that it was more meet to bee in armes, then in amity with the *Frenchmen*, who being inferiour to the *Engliſh* in courage, did alwayes over-reach them in craft, and being too weake for Warre, did many times prevaile by peace: that now they had got into their hands, many Townes and Holds, appertaining to the Crowne of *England*, they were willing to conclude a peace, to exclude the King thereby from his poſſeſſions:

but e

but whenſoever occaſion ſhould change for their advantage, they would bee then as ready to ſtart from the friendſhip, as at that preſent they were to ſtrike it: that the *French* Kings Daughter, being but a child, was very unmeet for the marriage of King *Richard*, as well for diſparity of age, as for that the King had no iſſue by his firſt wife, and was not like to have any by this, except (perhaps) in his old and whithered yeares. When the Duke ſaw, that with theſe motives hee did nothing prevaile, hee ſubordned the *Londoners*, to make petition to the King, that ſeeing there was peace with *France*, hee would releaſe them of the Subſidy which they had granted to him in regard of thoſe warres. This ſuite was inſtantly followed, and much perplexed the King, untill the Duke of *Lancaſter* declared to the people, that the King had beene at the charge and diſpence of three hundred thouſand pounds in his voyage into *Franse*, for the procuring

curing of this peace: whereupon they were pacified, and desisted from their demand.

The yeare following, *Guido* Earle of Saint *Pauls*, was sent into *England* by *Charles* King of *France*, to visite and salute in his name, King *Richard*, and Queene *Isabel* his wife, the *French* Kings Daughter. To this Earle, the King did relate, with what fervency the Duke of *Glocester* contended to make disturbance of the peace betweene *England* and *France*, how, because his mind was not therein followed, hee moved the people to seditious attempts, bending himselfe wholly to maintaine discord and disquiet, rather in his owne Countrey then not at all. Hee further reported what stiffe strifes, in former times, the Duke had stirred: which, howsoever they were done, yet as they were declared, they sounded very odious and hard. When the Earle heard this, hee presently answered, that the Duke was to dangerous a sub- 1397.

ject

ject to bee permitted to live: that greatneſſe was never ſafe, if it grow exceſſive and bold: that the King muſt not affect the vaine commendation of clemency, with his owne perill: and that it touched him both in honour to revenge the diſgraces which hee had received, and in policy to prevent the dangers which hee had cauſe to feare. Theſe words ſo ſharpened the Kings diſpleaſure, that from thenceforth hee baſied his braines in no one thing more, then how to bring the Duke to his end. Now hee beganne to pry more narrowly into his demeanour: to watch his words: to obſerve actions: and alwayes to interpret them to the worſt, framing himſelfe to many vaine and needleſſe feares. Oftentimes hee would complaine of him to the Duke of *Lancaſter*, and the Duke of *Yorke*, how fierce and violent hee was in his ſpeeches, and croſſe to him in all matters. The Dukes would make anſwer that the Duke of *Gloceſter* their brother, was indeed

indeed more hot and vehement then they did commend: yet his fiercenesse was joyned with faithfulnesse, and his crosseneſſe proceeded from a care, least the Commonwealth should decreaſe either in honour, or in poſſeſſions: and therefore the King had neither need to feare, nor cause to dislike.

About that time, the Dukes of *Lancaſter* and of *Yorke* withdrew themselves from the Court, to their private Houſes, the Duke of *Glocester* also went to ly at *Plaſhey*, neere *Chelmsford* in *Eſſex*: upon advantage of which ſeperation, the King stood distracted in mind, betweene feare to defer, and shame to avow the deſtruction of the Duke, least hee might happily bee disappointed by the one, or dishonoured by the other. Hereupon hee entred into counsaile with *John Holland*, Earle of *Huntington*, his halfe brother: and *Thomas Mowbray*, Earle of *Nottingham*, how the Duke of *Glocester* might be ſuppreſſed or oppreſſed rather,

rather, the cruelty which was but wavering in the King, yea wanting by nature, was ſoone confirmed by evill adviſe: and being once inclined to bloud, hee did not faile, either of examples of lewd action to follow, or direction of cruell Counſaile what to doe: ſo the plot was contrived, and according thereto, the King and the Earle of *Nottingham* rode together into *Eſſex*, as though it were to diſport themſelves in hunting: when they were in the midſt of the Forreſt, the Earle made ſtay, and the King paſſed forth with a ſmall and unſuſpitious company to the Duke lying at *Plaſhey*: there hee ſtayed dinner: and then pretending occaſion of preſent returne, hee deſired the Duke to accompany him to *London*, the faire intreaty of a Prince, is a moſt forcible command: therefore the Duke ſuppoſing that onely to bee intended indeed, which was pretended in ſhew, went to horſe-back with the King, taking ſuch ſmall attendance, as upon the ſudden

ſudden could bee in a readineſſe, and appointing the reſt to come after him to *London*. So they rode together uſing much familiar talke by the way, untill they came neere the place of await: then the King put his horſe forward, and the Duke comming behind, was ſuddenly intercepted and ſtayed, crying aloud, and calling to the King for his helpe: the King continued his journey as though hee had not heard: and the Duke was violently carried to the *Thames*, and there ſhipped in a veſſell layed for the purpoſe, and from thence conveyed over to *Calis*.

When the King came to *London*, hee cauſed the Earle of *Warwick* alſo to bee arreſted and ſent to priſon, the ſame day that hee had invited him to dinner, and ſhewed good countenance, and promiſed to bee a gracious Lord unto him. Vpon the like diſſembled ſhew, the Earle of *Arundel*, and his Sonne, and certaine others were arreſted alſo, and

committed to prison in the Ile of *Wight*.

The common people upon the apprehending of these three Noblemen, whom they chiefely, and almost onely favoured, were in a great confusion and tumult; and there wanted but a head to draw them to sedition: every man sorrowed, murmured, and threatned, and daring no further, stood waiting for one to lead them the way: all being ready to follow that, which any one was loath to beginne. The Duke of *Lancaster* and of *Yorke* gathered a strong army, and came therewith to *London*, where they were readily received by the Citizens, although the King had commanded the contrary: but this seemed to bee done, rather for guard to themselves, then regard to any others.

The King all this time, kept at a Village called *Helhame*, within foure miles of *London*, having about him a great power of armed men, which hee had gathered out of

Cheshire

Cheſhire and *Wales*: and to pacifie the common people, hee cauſed to bee proclaimed, that the Lords were not apprehended upon old diſpleaſures, but for offences lately committed, for which they ſhould bee appealed by order of Law, and receive open triall, in the Parliament next following: the like meſſage was ſent to the Duke of *Lancaſter*, and the Duke of *Yorke*, lying at *London*: to whom the King made faith, for the ſafety of their perſons, and indemnity of their goods, and that nothing ſhould bee attempted without their privity and advice: all this was as raſhly believed, as it was craftily given out: whereupon the Dukes diſſembled their feares, and diſſolved their forces, and remained in expectancy what would enſue.

A little before the feaſt of Saint *Michaël*, the Parliament beganne at *London*, wherein Sir *Iohn Buſhie*, Sir *William Bagot*, and Sir *Henry Greene*, were principall agents for

the Kings purpose. These were then in all the credites and authority with the King, and his chiefest Schoolemasters both of cruelty and deceit: they were proud, arrogant, and ambitious, and upon confidence of the Kings favour, professed enemies to men of ancient Nobility; to the end, that being lately start up, they might become more famous by maintaining contention with great persons. And first, by their importuned travaile, all the Charters of pardon, granted by the King, were in this Parliament annulled and revoked. Then the Prelates did constitute Sir *Henry Percie* their Procuratour, and departed the house, because they might not bee present in judgement of bloud. Lastly, the Earle of *Arundel*, and the Earle of *Warwick* were arraigned; and for the same offences, for which they had beene pardoned (namely for encroaching to themselves Royall power in judging to death *Simon Burly*, *Iohn Berneis*, and others, without the Kings consent,) were

were condemned to bee hanged, drawne, and quartered: but the King ſo moderated the ſeverity of this ſentence, that the Earle of *Arundel* was onely beheaded, and the Earle of *Warwick* committed to perpetuall impriſonment in the Ile of *Man*.

The Duke of *Glocester*, was ſo greatly favoured, that it was thought a point both of policy and peace, not to bring him to his open anſwer, but to put him to death ſecretly: ſo hee was ſtrangled under a feather bed at *Calis* by the Earle of *Nottingham*, being then Earle Marſhall: which death, howſoever he deſerved; yet dying as hee did not called, nor heard, he died as guiltleſſe.

In this ſame Parliament, *Thomas Arundel* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* was alſo accuſed, for executing the commiſſion againſt *Michael De-la-poole*, Earle of *Suffolke*: for which cauſe, his temporalties were ſeazed; his lands and goods forfeited, as well in uſe as in poſſeſſione

and hee himſelfe was adjudged to exile, and charged to depart the Realme, within ſix weekes then next enſuing. So hee went into *France*, where afterwards, hee became a principall meane of the revolt which followed. Alſo the Lord *Cobham* was exiled into the Ile of *Gerneſey*: and Sir *Reinald Cobham* was condemned to death, not for entring into any attempt againſt the King, but becauſe he was appointed by the Lords to bee one of his Governours, and of his Counſaile, in the 11. yeare of his raigne.

Now the King falſely ſuppoſing, that hee was free from all dangers, and that the humour againſt him, was cleane purged and ſpent, conceived more ſecret contentment, then hee would openly bewray; as more able to diſſemble his joy, then conceale his feare: being ſo blinded and bewitched with continuall cuſtome of flatteries, that hee perceived not, that the ſtate of a Prince is never ſtabliſhed by cruelty and craft.

craft. On the other ſide, the Common people were much diſmayed, having now loſt thoſe whom they accompted their onely helpes, and their onely hopes, both for their private affaires, and for ſupporting the ſtate: and becauſe theſe miſhaps happened unto them, for maintaining a cauſe of common diſlike, the peoples ſtomack was ſtirred thereby to much hate and heart-burning againſt the King. And to make their deaths the more odious, the Earle of *Arundel* was reputed a Martyr, and Pilgrimages were dayly made to the place of his buriall: the rumour alſo was current but without either authour or ground, that his head was miraculouſly faſtened againe to his body: this whileſt all men affirmed, and no man knew, the King cauſed the corps to bee taken up, and viewed, tenne dayes after it was interred: and finding the ſame to bee fabulous, hee cauſed the ground to bee paved where the Earle was laid, and all mention of his buriall to

bee taken away, forbidding publikely any ſuch ſpeeches of him afterwards to bee uſed. But this reſtraint raiſed the more: and they, who if it had bin lawfull, would have ſaid nothing, being once forbidden, could not forbeare to talke. It was alſo conſtantly reported, that the King was much diſquieted in his dreames with the Earle, who did often ſeeme to appeare unto him, in ſo terrible and truculent manner, that breaking his fearefull ſleepe, hee would curſe the time that ever hee knew him.

1398. In the one and twenty yeare of the raigne of King *Richard*, *Henry* Earle of *Darby*, was created Duke of *Hereford*: at which time the King created foure other Dukes: to wit, Duke of *Aumerle*, who was before Earle of *Rutland*: Duke of *Southrey*, who was before Earle of *Kent*: Duke of *Exceſter*, who was before Earle of *Huntington*: and Duke of *Norfolke*, who was before Earle of *Nottingham*. This degree of honour long time after the conqueſt of

of the *Normans* (whoſe chiefeſt Rulers had no higher title) was accompted too great for a ſubject to beare: the fourme of the Commonwealth, being framed by the Victours, farre from equality of all, and yet the King excepted without eminency of any. At the length King *Edward* the third created his eldeſt Sonne *Edward* Duke of *Cornewall*, and made this honour hereditary, conferring it unto many: ſince which time, divers Princes of his land have beene either put, or kept, or hazarded from their eſtate, by men of that quality and degree. The King likewiſe created the Counteſſe of *Norfolke*, Dutcheſſe of *Norfolke*: the Earle of *Sommerſet*, Marqueſſe of *Sommerſet*: the Lord *Spencer*, Earle of *Glocester*: the Lord *Nevill*, Earle of *Weſtmerland*: the Lord *Scroupe*, Earle of *Wiltſhire*, and the Lord *Thomas Darey* his Steward, Earle of *Worceſter*. Among theſe, hee made diviſion of a great part of the lands of the Duke of

Glocester, and of the Earles of *Arundel* and *Warwick*: ſuppoſing by this double liberality of honour and poſſeſſions, to have purchaſed to himſelfe moſt firme friendſhips: but bought friends, for the moſt part, are ſeldome either ſatisfied or ſure: and like certaine Ravens, in *Arabia*, ſo long as they are full, doe yeeld a pleaſant voice: but being empty, doe make a horrible cry.

Now the Duke of *Hereford* raiſed his deſires, together with his dignities, and either upon diſdaine, at the undeſerved favour and advancement of ſome perſons about the King: or upon diſlike, that the King was ſo diſhonourably both abuſed and abaſed by them: or elſe (perhaps) upon deſire, to manifeſt his owne ſufficiencie in matters of controulement and direction: being in familiar diſcourſe with *Thomas Mowbray* Duke of *Norfolke*, hee brake into complaint, how the King regarded not the Noble Princes of his bloud, and Peeres of the Realme,

and

and by extremities uſed to ſome, diſcouraged the reſt from intermedling in any publique affaires: how inſtead of theſe, hee was wholly governed by certaine new-found and new-fangled favorites, vulgar in birth, corrupt in qualities; having no ſufficiency either of councell for peace, or of courage for warre; who being of all men the moſt unhoneſt, and the moſt unable, with hatefulneſſe of the one, and contempt of the other, were generally deſpited in all the Realme: that hereby, Firſt, the honour of the Kings perſon was much blemiſhed; for ungrate and ungratious adherents are alway the way to hatred and contempt. Secondly, the ſafety of his ſtate might bee endangered; for extraordinary favour to men apparently of weake or bad deſert, doth breed inſolency in them, and diſcontentment in others, two dangerous humours in a Common-wealth. Thirdly, the dignity of the Realme was much empaired: whoſe fortune and valour

lour being guided by the ill chance of ſuch unlucky leaders, ſtood never in the like Tearmes of doubt and diſtreſſe; ſo that matters of peace were tumultuous and uncertaine, and atchievements of warre were never brought to honourable concluſion: that *Alexander Severus* would have ſmoaked ſuch ſellers of ſmoake; that *Xerxes* would have pulled their skinne over their eares; and high time it was, that the King ſhould looke unto them: for the Nobility grew out of heart, the Commons out of hope, and all the people fell to a diſcontented murmuring. And this hee ſaid (as hee ſaid) not for any grudge, but for griefe and good will: and therefore deſired the Duke, who was one of the privy Councell, and well heard with the King, to diſcover unto him theſe deformities and dangers, that by repairing the one, hee might happily repell the other.

Theſe words procured to the Duke of *Herford* both great offence,

fence, and great glory: at the delivery whereof, the Duke of *Norfolke* made ſhew of good liking, and promiſe of ſincere dealing. And indeed, if they had beene as faithfully reported by him, and by the King as friendly taken, as they were faithfully and friendly meant, many miſchiefes might have beene avoided: but both of theſe did faile: for the Duke of *Norfolke* although in former times he had taken part with the Lords, yet afterwards, being deſirous to bee accounted rather among the great men, then the good, hee made ſale of his honour, to maintaine his pleaſure, and continue himſelfe in grace with the King; to which hee was altogether inthralled: inſomuch, that the murthering of the Duke of *Glocester*, and the execution of the Earle of *Arundel*, was to his charge eſpecially committed: and ſuppoſing upon this occaſion to make a free hold of his Princes favour, hee grievouſly aggravated theſe ſpeeches in reporting them, and yet cun-

cunningly too: with many lies intermixing some truths, or making the truth much more then it was. Againe, the King not enduring the search of his soares, did bend his mind rather to punish the boldnesse, then examine the truth of these reproofes: his eares being so distempered with continuance of flattery, that hee accompted all sharp that was sound, and liked onely that which was presently pleasant, and afterwards hurtfull. Thus wee may dayly observe, that no strange accident doth at any time happen, but it is by some meanes foreshewed, or foretould: but because these warnings are oftentimes either not marked, or misconstrued, or else contemned, the events are accompted inevitable and the admonitions vaine.

The King being in this sort touched by the one Duke, and tickled by the other, was not resolved upon the suddaine, what to doe: therefore hee assembled his Councell and

and called the two Dukes before him, and demanded of the Duke of *Norfolke*, if he would openly avouch that which hee had ſuggeſted in ſecret. The Duke ſeeing it was now no time for him, either to ſhrinke or ſhuffle in his tale, with a bold and confident courage repeated all that before hee had reported. But the Duke of *Hereford* could not bee borne downe by countenance, where his cauſe was good: and therefore after a ſhort ſilence, whereby hee ſeemed rather amazed at the ſtrangeneſſe of this matter, then abaſhed at the guilt, hee made low obeyſance to the King, and greatly both thanked and commended him, that hee had not given haſty credite to matters of ſuch tender touch, as his griefe might have borne out the blame of raſhneſſe in revenge; deſiring him to continue yet a while, the reſpite of his diſpleaſure, and to reſerve his judgement free for indifferent audience. Then he declared in order, what ſpeech had paſſed

from

from him, upon what occaſion, and to what end: all the reſt hee ſtoutly denied, affirming, that it was falſely ſurmiſed by his Adverſary, either upon malice to pick a quarrell; or upon ſycophancy to pick a thanke, and that thereupon hee was untrue, unjuſt, a forger of ſlanderous and ſeditious lies, whereby hee treacherouſly indevoured to ſeduce the King to deſtroy the Nobility, and to raiſe diſturbance within the Realme: and this hee offered to prove upon him (if the King would permit) by the ſtroake of a ſpeare and by dint of ſword. The Duke of *Norfolkes* ſtomack not uſed to beare ſcorne; could not diſgeſt theſe Tearmes of diſgrace: whereupon hee ſtiffely ſtood to his firſt imputation: & for maintenance thereof, he accepted, and alſo deſired the combate. The King would ſome other wayes have quieted this contention; but the Dukes would agree to no other kind of agreement: and thereupon threw downe their gloues one againſt the

other for gages. The King ſeeing their obſtinacy, granted them the battaile, and aſſigned the place at the City of *Coventry*, in the Moneth of *Auguſt* then next inſuing: where in the meane time, hee cauſed a ſumptuous Theater, and Liſts royall to bee prepared.

At the day of combate, the two Dukes came, well handed with Noblemen and Gentlemen of their linage. The Duke of *Aumerle* for that day high Conſtable, and the Duke of *Surrey* for the ſame time and action, high Marſhall of *England*, entred into the Liſts, with a great troupe of men apparelled in ſilke ſondale, embroidered with ſilver, every man having a tipped ſtaff to keep the field in order. About the time of prime, the Duke of *Hereford* came to the Barriers of the Liſts mounted upon a white courſer, barbed with blew and greene velvet, embroidered gorgeouſly with Swans and Antilops of Goldſmiths worke, armed at all points, and his ſword drawne in his hand. The Conſtable

and

and Marſhall came to the barriers, and demanded of him, who hee was? Hee anſwered: I am *Henry* Duke of *Hereford*, and am come to doe my devoire againſt *Thomas Mombray* Duke of *Norfolke*, as a Traytour to God, the King, the Realme, and mee. Then hee ſware upon the Evangelists, that his quarrell was right, and upon that point deſired to enter the liſts, then hee put up his ſword, pulled downe his beavier, made a croſſe on his fore-head, and with ſpeare in hand, entred into the Liſts, and there lighted from his horſe, and ſate downe in a chaire of greene velvet, which was ſet in a traverſe of greene and blew velvet at the one end of the liſtes: and ſo expected the comming of his enemy: ſoone after King *Richard* entred the field with great pompe both in bravery and traine: hee had in his company, the Earle of Saint *Paul*, who came purpoſely out of *France* to ſee this combate tried; he was attended with all the Noble Peeres of the Realme, and guarded with

with tenne thouſand men in armes, for feare of any ſuddaine or intended tumult.

When hee was placed on his ſtage, which was very curiouſly and richly ſet forth, a King at armes made proclamation in the name of the King, and of the high Conſtable, and of the Marſhall, that no man, except ſuch as were appointed to order and marſhall the field, ſhould touch any part of the liſtes, upon paine of death. This proclamation being ended, another Herald cried: Behold here, *Henry* of *Lancaſter* Duke of *Hereford*, appellant, who is entred into the liſtes Royall, to doe his devoire, againſt *Thomas Mowbray* Duke of *Norfolke* defendant, upon paine to bee accompted falſe and recreant. The Duke of *Norfolke* was hovering on horſeback at the entry of the liſtes, his horſe being barbed with crimſon velvet, embroadered richly with lions of ſilver; and mulbery trees: and when hee had made his oath, before the Conſtable and

and Marſhall, that his quarrell was juſt and true, hee entred the field boldly, crying aloud, God aid him that hath the right: then hee lighted from his horſe and ſat downe in a Chaire of crimſon velvet, curtained about with red and white Damaske, and placed at the other end of the Lists. The Lord Marſhall viewed both their ſpeares, to ſee that they were of equall length: the one ſpeare hee carried himſelfe to the Duke of *Hereford*, and ſent the other to the Duke of *Norfolke* by a Knight. This done a Herrald proclaimed, that the traverſes and chaires of the combattants ſhould bee removed, commanding them in the Kings name, to mount on horſeback, and addreſſe themſelves to the encounter, the Dukes were quickly horſed, and cloſed their beavieres, and caſt their ſpeares into the reſts. Then the trumpets ſounded, and the Duke of *Hereford* ſet forth towards his enemy, about ſix or ſeaven paces; but before the Duke of *Norfolke* beganne to put for-

forward, the King caſt downe his Warder, and the Herralds cried hoa: then the King cauſed the Dukes ſpeares to bee taken from them, and commanded them to forſake their horſes, and returne againe to their chaires: where they remained above two long houres, whilſt the King deliberated with his Councell what was fitteſt to bee done. At laſt, the Herralds cried ſilence: and Sir *Iohn Bercy* a Secretary of State, with a loud voice, read the ſentence and determination of the King and his Councell out of a long roule: wherein was contained, that *Henry* of *Lancaſter* Duke of *Hereford*, appellant, and *Thomas Mowbray* Duke of *Norfolke*, defendant, had honourably appeared that day within the Liſts Royall, and declared themſelves valiant and hardy Champions; being not only ready, but forward and deſirous to dare in the battell: but becauſe this was a matter of great conſequence and import, the King with the advice of his Councell, thought it meet to take the ſame

ſame into his owne hands: and thereupon had decreed, that *Henry* Duke of *Hereford*, becauſe hee had diſpleaſed the King, and for divers other conſiderations, ſhould within 15. dayes next following, depart out of the Realme, and not to returne during the Tearme of tenne yeares, without the Kings eſpeciall licence, upon paine of death.

When this judgement was heard, a confuſed noiſe was raiſed among the people, ſome lamenting either the deſert, or the injury of the Duke of *Hereford*, whom they exceedingly favoured: others laughing at the conceit of the King: firſt in cauſing, and afterwards in fruſtrating ſo great an expectation: wherein hee ſeemed to doe not much unlike *Caligula*; who lying in *France* with a great army neere the Sea ſhoare, gave the ſigne of battell, ſet his men in array, marched forth as if it had beene to ſome great piece of ſervice and ſuddenly commanded them all to gather cockles.

Then

Then the Herralds cried againe, ô Yes: and the Secretary did read on, how the King had likewiſe ordained, that *Thomas Mowbray* Duke of *Norfolke*, becauſe hee had ſowen ſedition, by words whereof hee could make no proofe ſhould avoid the Realme of *England*, and never returne againe, upon paine of death: and that the King would take the profits and revenues of his lands, untill hee had received ſuch ſummes of money as the Duke had taken up, for wages of the garriſon of *Calis*, which was ſtill unpaid: and that the King prohibited, upon paine of his grievous diſpleaſure, that any man ſhould make ſuit or intreaty to him, on the behalfe of either of theſe two Dukes.

Theſe ſentences being in this ſort pronounced, the King called the two exiles before him, and tooke of them an oath, That they ſhould not converſe together in forraine Regions, nor one willingly come in place where the other was: fearing (as

(as it was like) leaſt their Common diſcontentment ſhould draw them, firſt to reconcilement, and afterward to revenge. But this policy was over weake for this purpoſe: for oaths are commonly ſpurned aſide, when they lye in the way, either to honour or revenge: and if their united forces was ſo much to bee regarded, their ſeperate powers was not altogether to bee contemned.

Therefore, the latter Princes of this Realme, have with more ſafety wholly aboliſhed the uſe of abjuration and exile: and doe either by death extinguiſh the power, or by pardon alter the will of great Offenders, from entring into deſperate and dangerous attempts: which men in miſery and diſgrace, have more vehemency to beginne, and more obſtinacy to continue.

When the *Samnites* had once ſo

ſo encloſed the Romane Legions within certain ſtreights, that they left them neither ſpace to fight, nor way to fly: but without force enforced them to yeeld: they ſent to *Herennius Pontius*, an aged Ruler of their ſtate, for his adviſe, what were beſt for them to doe: his anſwer was, that the Romans ſhould be permitted to depart, without any hurt, loſſe or ſcorne. This pleaſed not ſuch as were either covetous for ſpoyle, or cruell for blood: and therefore they ſent unto him the ſecond time, who then returned anſwer, that the Romans ſhould be put to the ſword, and not one man ſuffered to eſcape. The contrariety of theſe two counſels, brought the old man into ſuſpition of dotage: but he comming in perſon to the Campe, maintained both to be good: the firſt whereof (which he thought beſt) would by unexpected favour, provoke the Romans to a perpetuall friendſhip: the ſecond would deferre the warres for many yeares, wherein the enemies ſhould

hardly recover ſtrength: third counſaile there was none that ſafely might be followed. Yes (ſaid the *Samnites*) to grant them their lives, yet with ſuch conditions of ſpoyle and ſhame, as the lawes of victory doe lay upon them. This is the way (anſwered *Herennius*) which neither winneth friends, nor weakneth enemies: but will much encreaſe the fury againſt us, and nothing diminiſh the force. And even ſo, in matters of more particularity, that courſe of puniſhment is out of courſe, which doth neither reclaime the mind of men, nor reſtraine the might from miſchievous endeavours. But again to our purpoſe.

The Duke of *Norfolke*, having now got a fall, where he thought to take his reſt, repented his enterpriſe, and utterly condemned his light conceit of the Kings lightneſſe, and ſo with extreame griefe and anguiſh of mind, hee departed out of the Realme into *Almaine*, and from thence travelled to *Venice*; where through

through violence of thought and discontentment, in short time he ended his dayes. This sentence of banishment was given against him the same day of the yeare, wherein the Duke of *Glocester* by his wicked meanes was strangled to death at *Calice*.

The Duke of *Hereford* tooke his leave of the King at *Eltham*, who there stroke away foure yeares of his banishment, and even offered himselfe to be fawned upon and thanked, for so odious a benefit. And this infortunate adventure hee neither bare out vainglorioufly, nor yet tooke impatiently: but in the midst of his misery, retained still his reputation and honour; shewing no signe of sorrow or submisnesse in his countenance, nor letting fall any intemperate and unseemly word. The people as he departed, by heaps flocked about him, some to see, and some to salute him: lamenting his departure in such sort, as though their only light and delight did then forsake

them: not ſparing to exclaime, that it was againſt the Law of Armes, againſt the cuſtome of the Realme, and againſt all right whatſoever, that he ſhould be exiled, who had done his honourable endeavour for the maintenance of his appeale. This affection was the more exceſſive, for that the Duke was driven into exile by occaſion of his liberall ſpeeches, againſt the moſt hatefull perſons in all the Realme: and being the only noble man then alive, of the popular faction, the love was wholly accumulated upon him, which was before divided among the reſt. And thus the Duke leaving *England*, tooke ſhipping and paſſed the Seas to Calice, and from thence went into *France*: where he was honourably entertained by *Charles* the French King, and found ſuch favour, that hee ſhould have taken to wife the onely daughter of *Iohn* Duke *Berrie*, Vncle to the King of *France*, but King *Richard* fearing the ſequel, if the favour which was borne to the Duke of

of *Hereford* within the Realme, ſhould be ſtrengthned with ſo great affinity in *France*, caſt ſuch ſtops in the way, that the marriage did not proceed.

This yeare the Lawrell trees withered, almoſt throughout the Realme, & afterwards againſt all expectation, recovered life and flouriſhed againe. The ſame yeare in Chriſtmaſſe holydayes a deepe River which runneth betweene *Snedliſtorie* & *Hareſwood*, neare to *Bedford*, ſuddenly ſtayed the ſtreame: ſo that for three miles in length, the channell was left dry, and no courſe of water did hinder paſſage on foot. This was afterwards interpreted to preſage, the revolt of the people, and the diviſion which happened the yeare following: to theſe wee may adde certaine other prodegies, either forged in that fabulous age, or happening commonly and of courſe, are then onely noted, when any notable accident doth enſue. When K. *Richard* brought his firſt wife out of *Beame*,

ſhe had no ſooner ſet foot within this Land, but ſuch a tempeſt did forthwith ariſe, as had not beene ſeene many yeares before: whereby divers ſhips within the haven were quaſhed to peices, but eſpecially, and firſt of all, the ſhip wherein the Queene was carried, this was the rather obſerved, becauſe ſuch ſtiffe ſtormes were likewiſe ſtirring, when the King brought his ſecond wife out of *France*: wherein many ſhips periſhed, and a great part of the Kings fardage was loſt. At Newcaſtle upon Tine, as two ſhipwrights were ſquaring a piece of Timber, whereſoever they hewed, blood iſſued forth in great abundance. At one of the Kings palaces, flyes ſwarmed ſo thicke, that they obſcured the ayre: theſe fought together moſt fiercely, ſo that ſackfuls lay dead upon the ground, and this continued ſo long, that ſcarce the third part of them (as it was thought) remained alive, many like accidents are recorded of that time; but I will maine-

taine

taine neither the truth of them, nor what they did pretend: being a matter wherein moſt men are rather ſuperſtitious, then not credulous, and doe oftentimes repute common occurrences to be ominous, when any ſtrange event doth enſue. Yet as I am loath to avouch any vaine and trifling matter, ſo dare I not detract all truth from things anciently reported; although done in an age wherein was ſome delight in lying, many doe ſuppoſe, that thoſe things which are fatally allotted, though they never be avoyded, yet ſometimes are foreſhewen: not ſo much that we may prevent them, as that wee ſhould prepare our ſelves againſt them.

In the two and twenty yeare of the raigne of K. *Richard*, *Iohn* of Gaunt, Duke of *Lancaſter* dyed, and was buried, on the north-ſide of the high altar, of the Cathedrall Church of S. *Paul* in London, he was a man adviſed and wary in his paſſages of life, liking better ſafe courſes with

reaſon, then happy by chance: of his owne glory, hee was neither negligent, nor ambitiouſly carefull: towards the King hee carried himſelfe in termes honourable enough for a moderate Prince, and yet not ſo plauſible as a vaine man would deſire; whereby there never happened to him any extraordinary matter, either in prejudice or preferment. After his death, the Duchie of *Lancaſter* did in right devolue to the Duke of *Hereford*, his eldeſt ſonne: but the King (as the nature of man is inclinable, to hate thoſe whom he hath harmed) ſeazed all the Lands and goods which appertained to the Duke of *Lancaſter*, into his owne hands, and determined to perpetuate the baniſhment of Duke *Henry* his ſonne: revoking the Letters Patents, which were graunted to him at his departure: whereby his generall Atturnies were enabled to proſecute his cauſes, and ſue Liverie of any inheritance: which during his exile, might fall unto him, his homage being reſpited

ted for a reaſonable fine. The King ſuppoſed his eſtate more ſafe, by the weakneſſe and want of the Duke, whom he had now in ſome jealouſie and doubt: but theſe violent dealings were meanes rather to provoke his miſchiefes, then to prevent them; for by injurious ſuppreſſing of the Dukes greatneſs, he greatly augmented the ſame.

Edmund Duke of *Yorke*, the Kings only Vncle which remained alive, had hitherto enforced his patience, to endure many things againſt his liking: but now either in diſdaine of this indignity, or in diſtruſt both of his own ſafety and of the common tranquillity of the Realme, he retyred himſelfe with the Duke of *Aumerle* his ſonne, to his houſe at *Langley*: ſuppoſing priuateneſſe to be the beſt defence, both from danger and blame, wher neither the king had judgement to diſcerne, nor any about him had, either heart or honeſty to admoniſh him what was done amiſſe; where an honourable

ſame was held ſuſpected, and a good life more in hazard then a bad: proteſting that none of theſe practiſes, were either deviſed by his counſaile, or done by his conſent.

At this time, the whole frame of the ſtate was much ſhaken, and matters of great weight and moment did hang by a very ſlender thred. The King was plunged in pleaſure and ſloath: after whoſe example, others alſo (as men doe commonly conforme their minds according to the Princes diſpoſition) gave over themſelves to delicacy and eaſe: whereby cowardiſe crept in, and ſhipwracke was made, both of manhood and glory. The chiefeſt affaires of ſtate had beene ordered for a long time, according to private reſpects, whereby the Commonwealth loſt both the fat and the favour, and ſeemed not at ſeaſons and by degrees, but with a maine courſe, and at once to ruinate, and fall. The north parts were many times canvaſed, and by ſmall, yet often loſſes, almoſt

almoſt conſumed by the *Scots*: who had there taken many townes and caſtles, and defaced all the countrey with ſlaughter and ſpoyle. Likewiſe the ſouth parts were oftentimes waſted by the Frenchmen: and in *France* many ſtrong holds were loſt. It was alſo conſtantly affirmed, that the King made agreement to deliver unto the King of *France*, the poſſeſſion of *Calice*, and of other townes which hee held in thoſe parts; but the performance thereof was reſiſted by the Lords: whether this were true or ſurmiſed probably, as agreeable to the Kings loole government, I cannot certainely affirme. As for *Ireland*, which in time of K. *Edward* the third, was kept in order and awe, by acquainting the people with religion and civility, and drawing them to delight in the plenty and pleaſures of well reclaimed countries; whereby it yeelded to the Kings coffers thirty thouſand pounds every yeare: it was then ſuffered to runne into waſte,

and

and the people by rudeneſſe became intractible: ſo that the holding thereof charged the King, with the yearly diſpence of thirty thouſand markes. Many ſuccours had beene ſent into theſe ſeverall countries; but ſcatteringly, and dropping, and never ſo many at once, as to furniſh the wars fully. The King made ſome expeditions in his owne perſon, with great preparation and charge: but being once out of credit, whatſoever fell out well, was attributed to others; misfortunes were imputed onely to him. If any thing were happily atchieved by ſome of the Nobility, it was by the Kings baſe hearted Paraſites, to whom military vertue was altogether unpleaſant, ſo extenuated or depraved, or envied, that it was ſeldome rewarded, ſo much as with countenance and thankes: yea ſometimes it procured ſuſpicion and danger, the King being informed by a cunning kind of enemies, Commenders, that to be a diſcreet and valiant Commander in the field, was a vertue

vertue peculiar to a Prince; and that it was a perillous point, to have the name of a man of private eſtate, famous for the ſame in every mans mouth. Hereupon, few ſought to riſe by vertue and valour, the readier way was, to pleaſe the pleaſant humour of the Prince. Likewiſe matters of peace, were managed by men of weakeſt ſufficiency, by whoſe councell either ignorant or corrupt, the deſtruction of the beſt hearted Nobility, was many times attempted, and at the laſt wrought. The profits and revenues of the Crowne were ſaid to bee let to farme, the King making himſelfe Landlord of his Realme, and challenging no great priviledge by his Raigne, but only a diſſolute and uncontrouled life. Great ſummes of money were yearely rather exacted from the ſubjects, then by them voluntarily granted: wherof no good did enſue, but the maintenance of the Kings private delights, & the advancement of his hatefull favorites. To theſe he was ſomewhat a-

bove

bove his power liberall: for which cauſe, hee was faine to borrow, beg, and extort in other places: but hee purchaſed not ſo much love by the one, as hate by the other. Beſides the ordinary tearmes of tenths and fifteenths, which were many times paid double in one yeare, divers new impoſitions were by him deviſed and put in uſe: ſometimes exacting xii.d. of every perſon throughout the Realme: ſometimes of every religious man and woman vi.s.viii.d. and of every ſecular Prieſt as much, and of every lay perſon married or ſole, xii.d. Vnder the favourable tearme of benevolence, he wiped away from the people ſuch heaps of money, as were little anſwerable to that free and friendly name. He borrowed in all places of the Realme great ſummes of money upon his privy Seals, ſo that no man of worth could eſcape his loane: but he ſeldome, and to few, returned payment againe.

This preſent yeare, he ſent certain Biſhops,

Bishops, and other personages of honour, to all the shires and Corporations within the Realme, to declare unto the people the Kings heavy displeasures against them, for that they had beene abetters and complices of the Duke of *Gloucester*, and of the Earles of *Arundell* and *Warwicke*: and that the King was minded to make a roade upon them, as common enemies, except they would acknowledge their offence, and submit themselves to his mercy and grace. Hereupon, all the men of worth in every shire, and Towne-corporate, made their acknowledgement and submission in writing under their seales: and afterwards were faine to graunt unto the King such importable summes of money, to purchase againe his favour, as the land being already greatly impoverished, they were hardly able to endure. Then were exacted of them strange and unaccustomed oathes, which were put likewise in writing under their seale. They were also compelled to set

ſet their hands and ſeales to blancke charts; wherein the King might afterwards cauſe to be written what he would: ſo that all the wealth of the Realme was in a manner at his devotion and pleaſure. Theſe and ſuch like violences, were farre wide from the moderate government of King *Henry* the ſecond: who maintaining great warres, and obtayning a larger dominion, then pertained at any other time to this Realme of *England*, never demanded ſubſidie of his ſubjects: and yet his treaſure after his death, was found to be nine hundred thouſand pounds, beſides his Iewels, and his plate.

In this ſort the King bearing a heavie hand upon his ſubjects, and they againe a heavie heart againſt him, and being withall a Prince weake in action, and not of valour ſufficient to beare out his vices by might, the people at length reſolved to revolt, and rather to runne into the hazard of a ruinous rebellion, then to endure ſafety joyned with ſlavery:

ſlaverie: ſo they attended occaſion, which ſhortly after was thus offered. The King received Letters of advertiſement out of *Ireland* (which being priviledged from other venimous beaſts, hath alwayes beene peſtered with traytors) how the Barbarous Iriſh had cut in pieces his Garriſon, and ſlaine *Roger Mortimer* Earle of *March*, (who had beene declared heyre apparent to the Crowne) exerciſing all the cruelty in waſting of the countrey, which wrath and rage of victory could incite a barbarous people to practiſe. This loſſe being great in it ſelfe, the hard affection of the people did much augment by report: whereupon the King deliberated, whether it were requiſite that hee ſhould undertake the warre in perſon, or commit it to Commanders of lower degree? Some perſwaded him, that wholly to ſubdue *Ireland*, ſtood neither with policie, nor yet almoſt with poſſibility: for if it were fully & quietly poſſeſſed, ſome governor might hap to grow to that greatneſſe,

as

as to make himselfe absolute Lord thereof; and therefore it was better to hold it certaine by weake enemies, then suspected by mighty friends, and yet by what meanes should those bogges and those woods be overcome, which are more impregnable, then the walled Townes of other countries? then if the purpose were, only to represse the savage people, the warre was of no such weight, as should draw the King to stand in the field: and therfore he might stay in the West parts in *England*, and from thence make shew of the Princely puissance and state; neither venturing his person without cause, and already at hand if need should require. Others were of opinion, that to subdue and repleniſh *Ireland*, was a matter neither of difficulty nor danger: but both profitable and honourable to the King, and to God very acceptable. For if credit might be given to ancient Histories, this Realme of *England* was once as insuperable with bogs and woods, as

as *Ireland* was then: but the Roman Conquerors kept not their preſidiarie Souldiers in idle garriſon, whereby many times the mind grew mutinous, and the body diſeaſed, and both unable for the labour and hardneſſe of the field: but they held as well them, as the ſubdued Britains continually exerciſed, either in building of townes in places of beſt advantage; or in making of high wayes: or elſe in drayning and paving of bogs: by which meanes the countrey was made fruitfull and habitable, and the people learned the good manners, not rudely to repulſe the flattering aſſaults of pleaſure; preferring ſubjection with plenty, before beggerly and miſerable liberty. That the ſame *Romans* alſo kept many larger Countries in quiet obedience, (ſo long as they were quiet among themſelves) without either feare or danger of any Governours; firſt by dividing them into ſmall Provinces: Secondly by conſtituting in every province divers officers, as Lieutenants

tenants and Procurators, whereof one was able to restraine the other; the first having power over the bodies of the subjects, the second over their goods: thirdly, by changing these officers every yeare: which was too short a time to establish a soveraignty: Lastly, by retaining at *Rome*, their wives and children, and whole private estate, as pledges for their true demeanour. That the danger was rather to bee feared, least a weake enemy whilest he was contemned, should gather strength, and be able to stand upon termes of withstanding: example hereof happened when the *Romans* overcame this Iland: for many Britaines, who upon no conditions would abide bondage, withdrew themselves into the North parts of the land, and by maintaining their ancient custome of painting their bodies, were called of the *Romans*, *Picti*: these were neglected a long time, and held in scorne, as neither of force, nor of number to be thought worthy the name of enemies

mies: but afterwards they confederated themselves with other people, and so sharpely assaulted the subdued Britaines, that being unable to resist, and the Romans shrinking from them, they were constrained to desire helpe of the Saxons, and so betweene their enemies and their aids, (being set as it were betwixt the beetle and the blocke) they lost the possession of the best part of their land. That it was a pittifull policy for assurance of peace, to lay all waste as a wilderneſſe, and to have dominion over trees and beasts, and not over men. That hereby the King did loose the revenue of a fruitfull countrey, and the benefit of wealthy subjects, which are the sureſt treasure that a prince can have. That hereby also the majesty of his estate was much impaired: for (as *Salomon* saith) *The honour of a king consisteth in the multitude of subjects.* That the country being unfurnished of people, was open to all opportunity of forrain enemies. That if none of these respects would

move:

move: yet the King was bound in duty to reduce those ſavages to the true worſhip of God, who did then either prophanely contemne him, or ſuperſtitiouſly ſerve him.

Theſe reaſons ſo weighed with the King, that hee gathered a mighty Army, determining to goe in perſon into *Ireland*, and to pacifie the countrey before his returne: but all his proviſion was at the charge of the ſubjects: and whereas in time of ſedition, a wiſe Prince will leaſt grieve his people: as ſeeming to ſtand in ſome ſort at their courteſie, and having to imploy their bodies beſide; the King in peace no ſtorer for war, was forced to offend, when he ſhould have beene moſt carefull to winne favour. So about Whitſontide, hee ſet forth on his voyage with many men, and few ſouldiers; being a diſſolute and untrained company, and out of all compaſſe of obedience, hee carried with him his whole treaſure, and all the goods and ancient Iewels appertaining to the Crowne. In

his

his company went the Duke of *Aumerle*, and the Duke of *Exeter*, and divers other noble men, and many Biſhops, and the Abbot of *Weſtminſter*. Hee alſo tooke with him the ſonnes of the Duke of *Glouceſter*, and of the Duke of *Hereford*, whoſe favourers he chiefely feared.

When he came to Briſtow, he was put into ſuſpicion, (whether upon ſome likelihood, or meere malice) that *Henry Piercy* Earle of Northumberland, and certaine others, entended ſome diſloyall enterpriſe againſt him: and for that cauſe did not follow him into *Ireland*, but had faſtned friendſhip with the King of *Scots*, upon purpoſe to retire themſelves into his countrey, if their attempts ſhould faile. Hereupon the King ſent meſſage that the Earle ſhould forthwith come unto him with all the power, that he could conveniently make. The Earle returned anſwer, that it was unneceſſary in reſpect of that ſervice, to draw men from ſuch diſtant places: for the

the Iriſh rebels were neither ſo many nor ſo mighty, but the King had ſtrength at hand ſufficient to ſuppreſſe them: that it was alſo dangerous to diſfurniſh the North-parts of their forces, and to offer opportunity to the Scottiſh Borderers, who were alwayes uncertaine friends in their extremities, and aſſured enemies upon advantage. The King ſeeing his commandement in theſe termes, both contemned and controuled, would not ſtand to reaſon the matter with the Earle, neither had he the reaſon to deferr revenge, untill hee had full power to worke it: but preſently in the violence of his fury, cauſed the Earle and his confederates to be proclaimed traytors, and all their Lands and goods to be ſeized to his uſe. The Earle tooke grievouſly this diſgrace, and determined to cure and cloſe up this harme with the diſturbance of the common ſtate. And thus the King having feathered theſe arrowes againſt his owne breſt, paſſed forth in his Iourney into *Ireland*.

This

This expedition at the first proceeded and succeeded exceedingly well, and the King obtained many victories, even without battell, as leading his men to a slaughter rather then to a fight: for the savage *Irish* were not under one government, but were divided into many partialities and factions, and seldome did two or three parts joyne their Common strength and study together: so whilest one by one did fight, all of them were either subdued or slaine. But these newes little rejoyced the Common people, they lusted not to listen thereto: their common talke was to recount their common grievances, to lay them together, and aggravate them by construction: every man more abounding in complaints then hee did in miseries. Also the Noble men (the principall object of cruelty) beganne to discourse both their private dangers, and the deformities of the State: and upon opportunity of the Kings absence, some of them did conspire to cut off

that authority which would not bee confined, and to caſt it upon ſome other, who was moſt like to repaire that which King *Richard* had ruined: or if (ſaid they) our power ſhall come ſhort of ſo good a purpoſe, yet will wee fell him both our lives and lands with glory in the field, which with certainty in peace wee cannot enjoy: The onely man upon whom all men reſolved, was *Henry* Duke of *Hereford* (whom ſince the death of his Father they called Duke of *Lancaſter*) not at his owne motion or deſire, but becauſe hee was generally eſteemed meet: as being of the Royall bloud, and next by deſcent from males to the ſucceſſion of the Crowne: one that had made honourable proofe of his vertues and valour: the onely man of note that remained alive, of thoſe that before had ſtood in armes againſt the King for the behoofe of the Commonwealth: for which cauſe hee was deepely touched at that time both in honour and in ſtate. This attempt plea-

pleased as possible to prove, and of necessity to be followed: whereupon they secretly dispatched their letters to the Duke, soliciting his speedy returne into *England*, and declaring that as well for the benefit of the Realme, as for their owne particular safety, they were forced to use force against King *Richard*: that if it would please him to make the head, they would furnish him the body of an able army, to expell the King from his unfortunate government, and to settle the possession of the Crowne in him, who was more apt and able to sustaine the same: that they would not provide him a base multitude onely, and they themselves helpe in bare wishes and advise, but would also adjoyne their hands and their lives, so that the glory perill should be common to all, the only his, if fortune favoured the enterprise. These letters were conveyed by men crafty and bold, yet of sure credit, and inward in trust with the Duke: who passing into *France*, first associated

unto them, *Thomas Arundel* late Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and at that time (whether deſervedly or without cauſe) an exile in *France*: then they travelled by ſeverall wayes, and in counterfeit attire to *Paris*, where all met at the Houſe of one *Clugney*, where the Duke then ſojourned. After ſome courteſies of courſe, with welcome on the one ſide, and thanks on the other, and joy of both: the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* having obtained of the Duke privacy and ſilence, made unto him a ſolemne oration in theſe words, or to this ſenſe following.

Wee are ſent unto you (right high and Noble Prince) from the chiefe Lords and States of our land, not to ſeeke revenge againſt our King upon private injury and diſpleaſure: nor upon a deſperate diſcontentment to ſet the State on fire: nor to procure the ambitious advancement of any particular perſon: but to open unto you the deformities and decayes of our broken eſtate, and to deſire

ſire your aid, in ſtaying the rumous downefall of the ſame. The remembrance of the honourable reputation that our Countrey hath borne, and the Noble acts which it hath atchieved, doth nothing elſe, but make the baſeneſſe more bitter unto us, whereinto it is new fallen. Our victorious armes have heretofore beene famous and memorable not onely within the bounds of our Ocean Sea, and in the Ilands adjoyning unto us; but alſo in *France*, in *Spaine*, and in other parts of *Europe*, yea in *Aſia* and in *Africk*, againſt the Infidels and Barbarians: ſo that all Chriſtian Princes have beene either glad to imbrace our friendſhip or loath to provoke us to hoſtility. But now the rude *Scots*, whoſe ſpirits we have ſo many times broken & brought on their knees, do ſcornefully inſult upon us: the naked and fugitive *Iriſh*, have ſhaked off our ſhackles, and glutteth themſelves upon us, with maſſacres and ſpoiles: with theſe wee dayly fight, not for glory, but to live; inſomuch as we are

become a pitty to our friends, and a very jeast to our most base and contemptible enemies. Indeed the King hath both sent and led great armies into these Countries, but in such sort, that they have much wasted the Realme with their maintenance: but neither revenged nor relieved it with their armes: and no mervaile, for all our diligent and discreet leaders (the very sinewes of the field) are either put to death, or banished, or else lyburied in obscurity and disgrace: and the marshalling of all affaires is committed (without any respect of sufficiency or desert) to the counsaile and conduct of those who can best apply themselves to the Kings youthfull delights. Among these ancient Nobility is accompted a vaine jeast; wealth, and vertue are the ready meanes to bring to destruction.

It grieves me to speake, but it helpeth not, to hide that which every man seeth: our Ancestours lived in the highest pitch and perfection of

liberty, but wee of ſervility; being in the nature not of ſubjects, but of abjects, and flat ſlaves; not to one intractable Prince onely, but to many proud and diſdainefull favorites: not alwayes the ſame, but ever new: and no ſooner have wee ſatisfied ſome, but freſh hungry Maſters are ſtreight wayes ſet upon us, who have more endammaged us by extortion and bribes, then the enemy hath done by the ſword. What unuſuall kinds of exactions are dayly put in practiſe? without either meaſure or end, & oftentimes without need; or if any be, it proceedeth rather upon riotous expenſes, then any neceſſity of honourable charge: and great ſummes of money are pulled and pilled from good ſubjects, to bee throwne away amongſt unprofitable unthrifts. And if any man openeth his mouth againſt theſe extorted taxations, then either by feined imputation of capitall crimes, or by ſmall matters aggravated, or elſe by open cruelty and force, his life or liberty is forth with

hazarded. It were too tedious, too odious, too frivolous to put you in mind of particular examples, as though your owne eſtate, and the lamentable loſſe of your Vncle, and other Noble friends, could bee forgotten: yea I ſuppoſe that there is no man of quality within the Realme, who either in his owne perſon, or in his neereſt friends, doth not plainely perceive, that no man enjoyeth the ſafegard of his goods, and ſuerty of his body; but rich men in the one, and great men in the other are continually endangered. This then is our caſe; but what is our remedy? we have endured, and we have entreated: but our patience have drawne more heavy burthens, and our complaints procured more bitter blowes: by the one, our livings, and our lives by the other are dayly devoured. And therefore we are now compelled to ſhake off our ſhoulders this importable yoke, and ſubmit our ſelves to the ſoveraignty of ſome more moderate and worthy perſon; not ſo much for the

griefe

griefe of our miſeries which are paſt, nor for the paine of our preſent diſtreſſes, as for feare of ſuch dangers as are moſt like to enſue; for the King hath cut away the chiefe of the Nobility, and the Commons he hath pared to the quick, and ſtill he harrieth us as a conquered Country: whereby we are laid bare to the havock of all our enemies, and utterly diſabled, not only to recover that which is loſt, but alſo to retain even that which is left. But to whom ſhould we complaine? what ſuccour, whoſe aid ſhould we deſire? you are the onely man, who in right ſhould, and in wiſedome can, and in goodneſſe will (we hope) relieve us. For you are neereſt to the King in bloud, and therefore ought to have the rule of that which his weakneſſe cannot wield. Your yeares are well ſtayed from the light conceits of youth, and ſo ſpent, that all your actions have made proofe of ability in government of greateſt charge: nothing paſt needeth excuſe, and feare is vain for any thing to come. The pains

and perils which heretofore you have undertaken for the benefit of your Countrey, putteth us also in good hope, that in these extremities you will not forsake us; wee are all as in a ship that is ready to sinke, as in a house that is ready to fall, and doe most humbly crave and call for your helpe, now or else never shew your selfe in favour of your Countrymen, to free us, to free your selfe, to free the whole State from these dangers and decayes, by taking into your hands the scepter and diademe of the Realme, and reducing againe the government thereof to a Princely freedome; in combining the Soveraignty of one with the liberty of all. Omit not this occasion, to set forth to the view of the World, as in a large field, and at free scope your vertue and courage, by relieving miserable wretches from their Oppressours: which action hath bin so highly honoured, that many Heathen men for the same, have beene accompted as Gods. This we are constrained to of-

fer

fer and intreat: this is both honourable for you to accept, and easie to bee performed: and so much the more, in that no Prince, by any people have beene desired with greater affection, nor shall bee with more duty obeyed.

The Duke entertained this speech with great moderation of mind, shewing himselfe neither disturbed thereat, nor excessive in joy. His answer concerning the King, was respective and well tempered; rather lamenting his weakenesse then blaming his malice. Concerning himselfe hee spake so modestly, that hee seemed rather worthy of a Kingdome, then desirous. The life (quoth hee) which hitherto I have led, hath alwayes beene free from ambitious attempts: and the stayednesse of my yeares, hath now setled my mind from aspiring thoughts: & experience of former dangers hath bred in mee a wary regard in such weighty proceedings; for to cast a King out of state, is an enterprise not hastily to be resol-

reſolved upon, nor eaſily affected: but ſuppoſe that matter not impoſſible; and perhaps not hard, yet the rateneſſe of that like precedents, will make the action ſeeme injurious to moſt men: and hee that ſhall attaine a Kingdome upon opinion of deſert, doth charge himſelfe with great expectation, and how honourably ſoever hee carry himſelfe, ſhall never want his deadly Enviers: beſides this, in civill diſſentions the faith of the whole people is fleeting, and danger is to bee doubted from every particular perſon: ſo that it is poſſible that all may fall away, and impoſſible to beware of every one. Therefore I could rather wiſh to ſpend the courſe of my yeares which yet remaine in this obſcure, yet ſafe and certaine ſtate, then to thruſt my ſelfe upon the pikes of thoſe perils, which being once entred into, are dangerous to follow; and deadly to forſake: for in private attempts, a man may ſtep and ſtop when hee pleaſe: but hee that aimeth at a Kingdome, hath no middle

dle course betweene the life of a Prince, and the death of a Traytour.

The Archbishop hearing this, did as vainely persist in importuning the Duke, as hee vainely seemed unwilling and strange. The state (said hee) wherein now you stand, is not so safe and certaine as you doe conceive. Indeed, by rejecting our request you shall avoid certaine dignity, and therewith uncertaine and contingent dangers; but you shall procure most certaine destruction both to your selfe and us. For this secret cannot bee kept long secret from the King: and even good Princes are nice in points of soveraignty, and beare a nimble eare to the touch of that string: and it more hurteth a subject to be esteemed worthy of the Kingdome, then it will profit him to have refused the offer. What then will he doe, who putteth the chiefest surety of his raigne in the baseneſſe & bareneſſe of his subjects? whose head being possessed with eterna[illegible]ealously, maketh every presumption a proofe,

and

and every light surmise a strong suspition against them. Surely since the generall favour and love which the people beareth you, hath bereaved you of your liberty, this their generall desire will not leave your life untouched. As for us, if wee either faint in our intent, or faile in the interprise, *actum est*: we shall be as lambs among lions: and no conqueſt can be so cruell as the Kings raigne will bee over us. Certainely we have gone too far, for to goe back; and the time is past, when you for ambition and wee for envy might seeme to attempt against the King: the attainment of the Kingdome must now bee a Sanctuary and refuge for us both. The like examples are not rare (as you affirme) nor long since put in practise, nor farre hence to be fetched. The Kings of *Denmarke* and of *Swedland*, are oftentimes banished by their Subjects; oftentimes imprisoned and put to their fine; the Princes of *Germany*, about an hundred yeares past, deposed *Adulphus* their Emperour, and are now in hand

hand to depoſe their Emperour *Wenceſlaus*. The Earle of *Flanders* was a while ſince driven out of his Dominion by his owne people, for uſurping greater power then appertained to his eſtate. The ancient *Britaines* chaſed away their owne King *Carecious*, for the lewdneſſe of his life, and cruelty of his rule. In the time of the *Saxon Heptarchy*, *Bernredus*, King of *Mercia*, for his pride and ſtoutnes towards his people, was by them depoſed. Likewiſe *Aldredus* and *Ethelbertus* Kings of *Northumberland*, were for their diſordens expelled by their ſubjects. Since the victory of the *Normains*, the Lords endeavoured to expell King *Henry* the third, but they were not able: yet were they able to depoſe King *Edward* the ſecond, and to conſtitute his young Sonne *Edward* King in his ſtead: theſe are not all, and yet enough to cleare this action of rareneſſe in other Countries, and novelty in our. The difficulty indeed is ſomewhat, becauſe the excellency is great:

but they that are afraid of every buſh, ſhall never take the bird: and your ſelfe had once ſome triall hereof, when without battaile, without bloud or blowes, you had the King at ſuch a lift, as hee held his Crowne at your courteſie, even at that time when his grievances were, neither for greatneſſe nor continuance, ſo intollerable as now they are growne: and by reaſon of his tender yeares, not out of all compaſſe, both of excuſe for the fault, and of hope for amendment. And as concerning the lawfulneſſe.

Nay (ſaid the Duke) where neceſſity doth inforce, it is ſuperfluous to uſe ſpeech, either of eaſineſſe or of lawfulneſſe: neceſſity will beate thorow braſen walles; and can bee limited by no lawes. I have felt very deeply my part in theſe calamities, and I would you knew with what griefe I have beheld yours: for what other reward have I received, of all my travailes and ſervices, but the death of my Vncle & deareſt friends, my

my owne baniſhment, the impriſonment of my Children, and loſſe of my inheritance? and what have beene returned to you, for your bloud ſo often ſhed in his unfortunate warres, but continuall tributes, ſcourges, gallowes, and ſlavery? I have made ſufficient proofe both of patience in my owne miſeries, and of pitty in yours: remedy them hitherto I could not: If now I can, I will not refuſe to ſuſtaine that part, which your importunity doth impoſe upon mee, if wee prevaile, we ſhall recover againe our liberty: if we looſe, our State ſhall bee no worſe then now it is: and ſince we muſt needs periſh, either deſervingly, or without cauſe, it is more honourable to put our ſelves upon the adventure either to winne our lives, or to dye for defert: and although our lives were ſafe, which indeed are not, yet to abandon the State, and ſleepe ſtill in this ſlavery; were a point of negligence and ſloath. It remaineth then, that wee uſe both ſecrecy and celerity, laying hold upon the

the oportunity which the Kings absence hath now presented unto us: for in all enterprises which never are commended before they bee atchieved, delayes are dangerous, and more safe it is to bee found in action, then in counsaile: for they that deliberate onely to rebell, have rebelled already.

So the Messengers departed into *England*, to declare the Dukes acceptance, and to make preparation against his arrivall, both of armour, and of subjection, and desire to obey. Presently after their departure, the Duke signified to *Charles* King of *France*, that hee had a desire to goe into *Britaine*, to visite *John* Duke of *Britaine* his friend and kinsman. The King suspecting no further fetch, sent letters of commendation in his favour, to the Duke of *Britaine*: but if hee had surmised any dangerous drift against King *Richard*, who not long before, had taken his Daughter to wife; in stead of letters of safe conduct, hee would have found

found letts to' have kept him safe from disturbing his Sonne in lawes estate.

As soone as the Duke was come into *Britaine*, hee waged certaine souldiers, and presently departed to *Calis*, and so committed to Sea for *England*; giving forth, that the onely cause of his voyage, was to recover the Dutchy of *Lancaster*, and the rest of his lawfull inheritance, which the King wrongfully detained from him. In this company was *Thomas Arundel* the Archbishop of *Canterbury* and *Thomas* the Sonne and Heire of *Richard* late Earle of *Arundel*, who was very young, and had a little before escaped out of prison, and fled into *France* to the Duke. The residue of his attendants were very few, not exceeding the number of fifteene lances: so that it is hard to esteeme whether it was greater marvaile, either that he durst attempt, or that he did prevaile with so small a company: but his chiefest confidence was in the favour and assistance of the

the people within the Realme. So he did beare with *England*, yet not in a ſtreight courſe, but floated along the ſhoare, making head ſometimes to one coaſt, and ſometime to another, to diſcover what forces were in a readines either to reſiſt or receive him.

As he was in this ſort hovering on the Seas, Lord *Edmund* Duke of *Yorke*, the Kings Vncle, to whom the King had committed the cuſtody of the Realme during the time of his abſence, called unto him *Edmund Stafford* Biſhop of *Chicheſter*, Lord Chancellour, and *William Scroupe* Earle of *Wiltſhire*, Lord Treaſurour of of the Realme, alſo Sir *Iohn Buſhy*, Sir *Henry Greene*, Sir *William Bagot*, Sir *Iohn Ruſſell*, and certaine others of the Kings Privy Councell; and entred into deliberation what was beſt to be done. At the laſt it was concluded, deceitfully by ſome, unskilfully by others, and by all perniciouſly for the King; to leave the Sea coaſts, and to leave *London*, the very Walles and

Caſtle

Caſtle of the Realme, and goe to S. *Albons*, there to gather ſtrength ſufficient to encounter with the Duke. It is moſt certain that the Dukes ſide was not any wayes more furthered, then by this diſſembling and deceiveable dealing: for open hoſtility and armes, may openly and by armes be reſiſted: but privy practiſes as they are hardly eſpied, ſo are they ſeldome avoided. And thus by this meanes the Duke landed about the feaſt of S. *Martin*, without let or reſiſtance, at *Ravenſpur* in *Houlderneſſe*, as moſt Writers affirme.

Preſently after his arrivall, there reſorted to him Lord *Henry Pearcy* Earle of *Northumberland*, and Lord *Henry* his Sonne, Earle of *Weſtmerland*, Lord *Radulph Nevil*, Lord *Roſe*, Lord *Willoughby*, and many other perſonages of honour, whoſe company encreaſed reputation to the cauſe, and was a great countenance and ſtrength to the Dukes further purpoſes. And firſt they tooke of him an oath, that he ſhould neither procure nor

not permit any bodily harme to bee done unto King *Richard*; whereupon they bound themselves upon their honours to prosecute all extremities against his mischievous Counsailors. And this was one step further then that which the Duke pretended at the first, when hee tooke shipping at *Calis*, which was onely the recovery of his inheritance: but that was as yet not determined, nor treated, and of some perhaps not thought upon; which afterwards it did ensue: and so was that place easily insinuated into by degrees, which with maine and direct violence would hardlier have beene obtained. Then the common people desperate upon new desires, and without head, head-long to matters of innovation, flocked very fast to these Noble men, the better sort for love to the Commonwealth, some upon a wanton levity, and vaine desire of change, others in regard of their owne distressed and decayed estate, who setting their chiefe hopes and devices upon a gene-

generall diſturbance, were then moſt ſafe when the common ſtate was moſt unſure. So betweene the one and the other, the multitude did in ſhort time increaſe to the number of threeſcore thouſand able ſouldiers.

The Duke finding this favour not onely to exceed his expectation, but even above his wiſh, hee thought it beſt to follow the current whilſt the ſtreame was moſt ſtrong, knowing right well, that if fortune be followed, as the firſt doe fall out, the reſt will commonly ſucceed. Therefore cutting off unneceſſary delayes, with all poſſible celerity hee haſtned towards *London*: to the end that poſſeſſing himſelfe thereof as the chiefe place within the Realme, both for ſtrength and ſtore, hee might there make the ſeat of the warre. In this journey no ſigne nor ſhew of hoſtility appeared, but all the way as hee paſſed, the men of chiefeſt quality and power adjoyned themſelves unto him, ſome upon heat of affection,

ſome

ſome for feare, others upon hope of reward after victory; every one upon cauſes diſlike; with like ardent deſire contending, leaſt any ſhould ſeeme more forward then they: In every place alſo where hee made ſtay, rich gifts and pleaſant deviſes were preſented unto him, with large ſupply both of force and proviſion, farre above his need: and the Common people which for their greatneſſe take no care of publique affaires, and are in leaſt danger by reaſon of their baſeneſſe, with ſhouts and acclamations gave their applauſe: extolling the Duke, as the onely man of courage, and ſaluting him King; but ſpending many contumelious termes upon King *Richard*, and depraving him as a ſimple and ſluggiſh man, a daſtard, a meycock, and one altogether unworthy to beare rule; ſhewing themſelves as much without reaſon in railing upon the one, as they were in flattering the other. Againe, the Duke for his part was not negligent to uncover the head, to bow

bow the body, to ſtretch forth the hand to every meane perſon, and to uſe all other complements of popular behaviour: wherewith the minds of the common multitude are much delighted and drawen; taking that to be courteſie, which the ſeverer ſort account abaſement. When he came to the Citie, hee was there likewiſe very richly and royally entertained, with proceſſions and pageants, and vers other triumphant deviſes and ſhewes: the ſtanding in all the ſtreets where hee paſſed, were taken up to behold him; and the unable multitude, who otherwiſe could not, yet by their good words, wiſhes, and wils, did teſtifie unto him their loving affections: neither did there appeare in any man at that time, any memory of faith and allegiance towards King *Richard*, but as (in ſeditions it alwayes hapneth) as the moſt ſwayed all did goe.

On the contrary ſide, the Duke of *Yorke* with the reſt of his counſaile, fell to muſtering of men at S. *Albones*

for the King: but as the people out of divers quarters were called thither, many of them proteſted, that they would doe nothing to the harme and prejudice of the Duke of *Lancaſter*, who they ſaid was unjuſtly expelled, firſt from his countrey, and afterwards from his inheritance. Then *W. Scroupe* Earle of Wiltſhire, Lord Treaſurer, S. *J. Buſh*, Sir *W. Bagot*, and Sir *Henry Greene*, perceiving the ſtiffe reſolution of the people, forſooke the Duke of *Yorke*, and the Lord Chancellor, and fled towards *Briſtow*; intending to paſſe the ſeas into *Ireland* to the King. Theſe foure were they upon whom the common fame went, that they had taken of the King his Realme to farme: who were ſo odious unto the people, that their preſence turned away the hearts of many ſubjects; yea it was thought that more for diſpleaſure againſt them, then againſt the King, the revolt was made. For being the only men of credit and authority with the King, under falſe colour

lour of obedience, they wholly governed both the Realme and him; to many miſchiefes corrupting his mind, and in many abuſing his name, either againſt his will, or without his knowledge, inſomuch as hee was innocent of much harme which paſſed under his commandement: but the patience of the people could not endure that two or three ſhould rule all: not by reaſon they were ſufficient, but becauſe they were in favour: and the King in that he permitted them whom hee might have bridled, or was ignorant of that which he ſhould have knowne, by tollerating and wincking at their faults, made them his owne, and opened thereby the way to his deſtruction. So often times it falleth out to be as dangerous to a Prince to have hurtfull and hatefull officers in place and ſervices of weight, as to be hurtfull and hatefull himſelfe.

The Duke of *Yorke* either amazed at this ſudden change, or fearing his adventure if hee ſhould proceed in

reſiſtance, gave over the cauſe, and preferred preſent ſecurity, before duty with danger; giving moſt men occaſion to miſdeeme by his dealing, that hee ſecretly favoured the Dukes Enterpriſe, likewiſe all the other Counſellors of that ſide, either openly declared for the Duke, or ſecretly wiſhed him well: and abandoning all private direction & adviſe, adjoyned themſelves to the common courſe, preſuming thereby of greater ſafety.

Duke *Henry* in the meane time being at *London*, entred into delibetation with his friends, what way were beſt to be followed. At the laſt; having conſidered the forwardneſſe of the people, the greatneſſe of the perill whereinto they had already plunged, and the Kings irreconcilable nature, whereof hee made proofe againſt the Duke of *Gloceſter*, and the Earles of *Arundell* and *Warwicke*: they finally reſolved to expell him from his dignity, and to conſtitute Duke *Henry* King in his ſtead: and to that end open warre was denounced againſt

againſt the King, & againſt all his partakers, as enemies, to the quiet & proſperity of the Realme; and pardon alſo promiſed to all thoſe that would ſubmit themſelves to follow the preſent courſe, otherwiſe to looke for no favour, but all extremities. None of the Nobility durſt openly oppoſe himſelfe to theſe deſignes: ſome unwilling to play all their ſtate at a caſt, kept themſelves at liberty, to be directed by ſucceſſe of further event: others conſented coldly, and in tearms of doubtfull conſtruction, with intent to interpret them afterwards, as occaſion ſhould change: but the moſt part did directly and reſolutely enter into the cauſe, and made their fortunes common with the Duke, in danger of the attempt, but not in honour: among whom, the Duke ſtanding up, uſed ſpeech to this purpoſe.

I am returned here as you ſee, at your procurement, & by your agreement have entred into armes for the common liberty: wee have hitherto proſperouſly proceeded, but in

what tearmes wee now ſtand, I am altogether uncertaine. A private man I am loath to be accounted, being deſigned to be King by you; and a Prince I cannot be eſteemed, whilſt another is in poſſeſſion of the Kingdome. Alſo your name is in ſuſpence, whether to be termed rebels or ſubjects, untill you have made manifeſt that your alleageance was bound rather to the ſtate of the Realme then the perſon of the Prince. Now you are the men who have both cauſed this doubtfulneſſe and muſt cleare the ſame; your parts ſtill remaineth to be performed; your vertue and valour muſt adde ſtrength to the goodneſſe of this action. Wee have already attempted ſo farre, that all hope of pardon is extinct; ſo that if we ſhould ſhrinke back, and break off the enterpriſe, no mercy is to bee expected, but butchery and gibbets, and all extremities: if we drive off and delay the accompliſhment therof, wee ſhall looſe the opportunity which now is offered, and open to our

our enemies occaſion of advantage: For the peoples blood is up now on our ſide, and nothing is wanting but our owne diligence and care: let us not therefore trifle out the time of doing, in talking and deliberating: it is beſt ſtriking whilſt the iron is hot: let us ſet forth roundly, and poſſeſſe our ſelves with ſpeed of all the parts of the Realme: and ſo we ſhall be able either to keepe out our concurrent, or elſe to entertaine him little to his liking. So troops of men were ſent into every quarter of the Realme, to ſecure them for making ſtrength on the part of King *Richard*: but the people in all places as men broken with many burthens, did eaſily entertaine the firſt Commer, and were not curious to ſide with the ſtronger. The Duke purſued thoſe of the Kings Privie Councell, which fled away from the Duke of Yorke; bearing himſelfe with great cheare and courage, as confident in the cauſe, and ſecure of the event. When he came at *Bri-*

ſtow hee found the Caſtle fortified againſt him; but in ſhort time hee forced it, and tooke therein Sir *Iohn Buſhy*, Sir *Henry Greene*, and *W. Scroupe, L. Treaſurer*, a joyfull prey to the common people: who (fearing that if execution ſhould be deferred, Petitions for pardon might happen to prevaile, and ſo their cruelties and injuries ſhould be anſwered with the vaine title and commendation of clemency) did violently require them unto death, no reſpite could be obtained, no defence admitted, no anſwer heard: yea their humble and ſubmiſſe intreaty was interpreted to argue a weake and broken courage upon a guilty conſcience, which more incenſed the rage of the people, crying out that they were traytors, blood-ſuckers, theeves, and what other hainous tearmes inſulting fury did put into their mouthes: at which clamorous and importunant inſtance, the day following they were beheaded, Sir *VVilliam Bagot* came not with them to *Briſtow*, but turned

turned to *Cheſter*: and the purſuit being made after the moſt, hee alone eſcaped into *Ireland*. This execution, partly becauſe it pleaſed the people, and partly becauſe it excluded all hope of the Kings pardon, cauſed them to cleave more cloſely to the Duke; which greatly increaſed both his glory, and his hope: having offers of ſo large aid & need of ſo little.

In the meane time this newes of the Dukes arrivall, and of other occurrences, part true, part falſe, & part enlarged by circumſtance, (as fame groweth in the going) was blowne over to the King, being then entangled with other broyles in *Ireland*, at the receipt whereof, he cauſed the ſonnes of the Duke of *Glocaſter*, & of the Duke of *Lancaſter* to be impriſoned in the ſtrong Caſtle of *Trim*, which is in *Ireland*, and for diſpatch to returne into *England*, left many matters unfiniſhed, & moſt of his proviſion behind, haſting and ſhuffling up, as preſent neceſſity did enforce. So being both unskilfull

and unfortunate himſelfe, and devoid of good direction; with more haſte then good hap, hee tooke ſhipping, with the Duke of *Aumerle*, *Exceter*, and *Surry*, the Biſhops of *London*, *Lincolne*, and *Caerliele*, and many other men of quality: and croſſing the ſeas, landed at *Milford-Haven* in Wales, in which countrimen he alwayes repoſed his chiefeſt ſurety and truſt, but then he ſaw contrary to his expectation, that as well there as in all other places, the people by plumps flocked to the Duke, & fled from him: yea they that came with him began for to waver, nō man encouraging them to be conſtant, but many to revolt. This ſuddaine change not looked for, not thought upon, diſturbed all the Kings deviſes, & made him irreſolute what he ſhould doe: on the one ſide hee ſaw his cauſe and quarrell to be right, and his conſcience (he ſaid) cleare from any bad demerite: on the other ſide he ſaw the great ſtrength of his enemies, and the whole power of

of the Realme bent againſt him: and being more abaſhed by the one, then emboldned by the other, hee ſtood perplexed in uncertaine termes, either where to ſtay, or whither to ſtir, having neither skill nor reſolution himſelfe in caſes of difficulty, and obnoxious to hurtfull and unfaithfull counſaile. Some adviſed him to martch forward, and pierce deeper into the land, before his own forces fell from him: affirming that valour is ſeconded by fortune: that this courage of his, would confirme the conſtancy of his ſouldiers: and his preſence put the people in remembrance of their faith, that in all places he ſhould find ſome, who for favour, or for hire, or elſe for duty, would adhere unto him: whereby hee ſhould ſoone gather ſtrength ſufficient to joyne iſſue with his enemy in the field. Others perſwaded him to retire againe into *Ireland*, and then if ſuccour failed him in *England*, to wage ſouldiers out of other countries. But the King being

being no man of action in military affaires, rejected both the counſailes, as neither venturous enough with the one, nor warie enough with the other: and taking a middle courſe (which in caſes of extremity of all is the worſt) hee determined to make ſtay in *Wales*, and there to attend to what head this humour would riſe.

The Duke upon advertiſement that the King was landed in *Wales*, removed with a ſtrong Army from *Briſtow* towards *Cheſter*, uſing the firſt opportunity againſt him, and which indeed was the fitteſt. When Lord *Thomas Pearcy* Earle of *Worceſter*, and Steward of the Kings Houſhold, heard of the Dukes approach, he brake forth into ſhew of that diſpleaſure, which before he had conceived againſt the King, for proclaiming his brother, the Earle of *Northumberland* traytor, and thereupon openly in the Hall, in the preſence of the Kings ſervants, he brake his white rod, the enſigne of his office,

fice, and forthwith departed to the Duke, willing every man to ſhift for himſelfe in time: by which act hee loſt reputation, both with the Haters and Favourers of King *Richard*; being accounted of the one a Corrupter, of the other a Forſaker, and betrayer of the King. After this example, almoſt all the reſt, more fearefull then faithfull, ſcattered themſelves every one his way: and they who in the Kings flouriſhing time, would have contended to be formoſt, now in his declining eſtate equally draw backe, and like ſwallowes, forſooke that houſe in the winter of fortunes boyſterous blaſts, where they did nothing but feed and foyle in the ſummer of her ſweet ſun-ſhine. And thus betweene faint ſouldiers, and falſe friends, the King was abandoned and forſaken, and left almoſt unto himſelfe: looke on he might, but let it, hee could not, as not of force to puniſh that, which hee never forced to prevent: his only remedy was patience: (a cold comfort) his

his onely revenge was complaint: (a weake weapon) betweene which two, his bitternesse did in this manner breake from him.

And doe these also (said he) forsake me? doth their faith and my fortune end together? well, if I had forsaken them in time, I had not been forsaken of others, who once loved me better, and now are able to harme me more. But now I see the blindnesse of my judgement: I plainely see, that there is no friendship in flattery, nor treachery in plaine truth: and I would I had as much time to reforme this error: as I am like to have to repent it, but they would not suffer mee to bee wise when I might, and now they have made me wretched they runne from me: they could be the causes, but they will not be companions of my miseries: such attendants are Crowes to a carcasse, which flocke together, not to defend, but to devoure it, and no sooner have they laid the bones bare, but straight-wayes they are gone.

Thus

Thus the King having loſt both the feare and love of his ſubjects, diſturbed and diſtracted in thoughts, without comfort, councell, or courage, remained ſtill in *Wales*, as a ſtranger at home, as an exile in his owne Kingdome, not daring to goe to *London*, nor any man deſirous to come to him, ſhifting ſtill from place to place, and (as it fals out to men diſtreſſed and amazed) fearing all things, but moſt diſliking the preſent. The Duke continually purſued him with a mighty Army: but the Kings company was too ſmall to do any thing by force, and yet too great to remaine in ſecret: neither were they in any ſort aſſured unto him, but ſuch as ſhame and reverence retained a while; bands of ſmall countenance with men fearefull of danger, and careleſſe of credit. At the length he came to the Caſtle of *Conweye*; and there being utterly deſtitute both of helpe and hope, he ſtood divided in mind what way to bend his courſe, all his followers were more ready

ready to impugne the opinions of other, then to give direction themſelves, as ſeeing better what to ſhun then what to follow: and as it alwayes chanceth in deſperate cauſes, that way was commonly preferred, whereof the opportunity was already paſt. Some adviſed him that it was then time to think, rather of ſaving his life, then recovering his eſtate. You ſee (ſaid they) how greatly, and how wholly your ſubjects are ſet againſt you: it is but in vaine to look for a ſuddain change, or without a change to hope that your purpoſes may prevail, give place for a time to the current of this fury: let it have the full ſway; and when it is at the higheſt pitch, it will turne againe; and then you ſhall have the tide as ſtrong on your ſide, as it is now againſt you. This motion or rather commotion of the people, is violent and againſt nature: and therefore (as a ſtone forced upward) is moſt ſtrong at the beginning, and the further it paſſeth, the more it weakneth, untill at laſt it returne to the naturall

turall courſe againe. Therefore give a little ſpace for the bad to draw back, for the good to put forward: treaſons prevaile on the ſuddaine, but good counſailes gather forces by leaſure. You have example in your noble Progenitor, King *Henry* the third, againſt whom the Lords ſet up *Lewis* the French Kings ſon: conditions were concluded, and faith was made that he ſhould be their King; but this purpoſe laſted not the pulling on: for before they had poſſeſſed him of the kingdome, they joyned together in armes againſt him, and were as fierce to drive him out of the Realme, as they had beene found to draw him in. The like alteration may you likewiſe not only hope, but aſſuredly expect: for the minds of men are conſtant in nothing but inconſtancy, & perſevere only in change, in diſlike of things preſent they deſire new, wherwith they reſt not long contented, but are many times glutted even with the firſt ſight. And indeed how can they long endure the Raigne of him, who

who attayning the Kingdome onely by their favour and might, ſhall hold the ſame in a manner, at their courteſie and will? for every unpleaſant command, ſhall be deemed ingratitude: every ſuit rejected, ſhall charge him with unkindneſſe; Yea, if honour be not offered, they will be diſcontented: and upon any occaſion of diſpleaſure, thinke themſelves as able to diſplace him, as they were to ſet him up: therefore you may for a time, returne againe into *Ireland*; or elſe paſſe the ſeas to your Father in law, the King of *France*: you may aſſure your ſelfe of his aſſiſtance, to ſet upon your ſide, and recover your loſſes. Times have their turnes, and fortune her courſe too and fro like the ſea, and magnanimity is ſhewne by enduring, and not relinquiſhing, when ſhe doth croſſe, only looſe no point of courage, and keepe your perſon at large: reſerving your ſelfe to that good hope, which never dyeth whilſt life endure.

Others, who were enemies to all coun-

counſaile, whereof themſelves were not Authors, perſwaded the King, that the Nobility and Commons of the Realm had attempted ſo far, that they would rather dye, then deſiſt; not ſo much for hatred to you, as for feare to themſelves; having ſo deadly incenſed your diſpleaſure againſt them. For it is a hard matter to forgive, and impoſſible to forget thoſe injuries and indignities which they have offered. And to omit what ſome Princes have done, what all will promiſe to doe, they will ſoone find freſh and bleeding examples what you are like to doe. The Duke of *Glouceſter*, and the Earle of *Arundell*, and of *Warwicke* did riſe in armes againſt you, not to remove you from your Crowne: but to remove certaine perſons from your company, an action more diſpleaſing then prejudiciall unto you: at the laſt, a friendſhip was made, and charters of free pardon granted unto them: but what followed? was ever the breach perfectly made up? did

did displeasure dye? or was it only dissembled? ah, it grieveth us to thinke, how the present want of their lives, hath fully revenged their deaths: for if they had lived, their countenance and authority would easily have stayed these stirs; and the manner of their deaths doth strike an obstinate persistance into all your enemies. As for refuge to forraine Princes, you shall surely receive of them entertainment and allowance, and yet may grow burdensome, and at last perhaps faile: but it is very hard to draw any Prince into so dangerous a quarrell: and more hard by that meanes to prevaile: or if you should, it is to be feared that the victorers will hold to themselves the benefit of their conquest, and not yeeld it over unto you. Few countries but have beene under pretence of ayde by forrainers subdued: and this was the onely cause which first drew the Saxons into this land: who so assisted the Britaines against their enemies, that themselves could not be re-

reſiſted from poſſeſſing their kingdome. Yet we do not altogether condemne the helpe of ſtrangers, in caſes of extremitie; but doe account it a remedy, leaſt to be truſted, and laſt of all to be tryed. What then if firſt you ſhould procure a treaty, to ſee in what termes the people ſtand againſt you? It may be that upon ſome conditions they will ſubmit themſelves unto you, as heretofore they have done. Or if they will needs deforce you from your kingdome, yet if an honourable maintenance may be aſſured, what ſhall you loſe therby? What ſhall you lack? You have no child to be diſinherited; the chiefeſt motive which maketh men ſo greedy to get, and ſo carefull to keepe. And as for your ſelfe, you ſhall bee removed from a ſteep and ſlippery hill to a ſmooth and pleaſant plain; from tempeſtuous ſeas to a calme haven; from dangerous travaile to ſecure reſt, & if there be no ſolace without ſafety, no felicity without firmneſſe; you ſhall find the private life not onely more ſweet

ſweet, but more high and happy, then your princely ſtate. The talleſt trees are weakeſt in the tops; in wideſt fields are greateſt tempeſts; and envy alwayes aimeth at loftieſt marks: ſo that to be placed on high, is a falſe felicity, and a true miſery in ſhew a rule, but indeed a ſubjection to all the ſubjects; having leaſt ſtay to ſtand, and moſt danger in the fall: and therefore if you come downe ſafely, you are therein priviledged above many other. But you ſhall loſe (you will ſay) the credit and the countenance of a King: ſo you ſhall the cares; and ſo you ſhall the caſualties. The Crowne and Scepter are things moſt weighty to weld: if a Prince be good, he is laden with labour, if evill, with infamy and reproach: if either, with perils: on every ſide hee is beſet with dangerous Rocks, with deadly Gulfes, and continually toſſed with ſtrong and ſturdy tempeſts: ſo that to be freed from theſe feares, is to be eſteemed an eſcape, and not a loſſe. This did

the

the Stoick Philoſopher perceive, who ſeeing *Dionyſius* ſit merily and freely conceited in the Theater, being a little before expelled his Kingdome; greatly condemned the error of his people, who had baniſhed him to ſuch liberty, and ſo preferred him by his puniſhment. Theſe are the dreams of Philoſophers (you will ſay) who uſually deprave and contemne honour, and yet never lie from honourable mens tables. Let paſſe then Philoſophers: go to vaine and ſottiſh men. *Seleuchus* being a King, was wont to ſay, that if a man knew with what cares the Diadem was clogged, hee would not take it up, although it lay in the ſtreet. You will ſay peradventure, that like the Boat-man, hee looked one way, and pulled another; or like the Lapwing, he cryed moſt when hee was furtheſt from his Neſt, vainely diſpraying that which hee was loatheſt to looſe. What ſay you then to *Antiochus*? whom when the *Romans* had diſpoyled him of all *Aſia*; he ſent unto them great thanks,

thankes, that they had rid him of infinit and importable cares, and set him at a moderate quiet: you will say that hee made a vertue of his neceſſity. Well then, wee are somewhat neere your caſe: and they that cannot frame their wils to this wiſdome, let them thanke their enemies for enforcing them to it. But what say you to *Diocleſian*? who did voluntarily relinquiſh, not a ſmall and corner Kingdome, but the greateſt Empire that the world did ever beare, and found ſo ſweet contentment in that exchange, that when hee was importuned by the Senate, to reſume his eſtate, hee utterly rejected their ſuite. But what need we travell in externe Hiſtories for thoſe examples, whereof wee have ſo large ſupply in our owne? the ancient Saxon Kings: *Kingilſus*, *Ina*, *Ceolulpus*, *Fadbertus*, *Ethelredus*, *Kenredus*, *Offa*, *Sebbi*, and *Sigebertus* did of their owne accord lay downe their Diadems and Scepters, and betake themſelvs to ſolitary, & religious lives. Now many Princes have held

held their estate with better fortune, but none did ever with greater honour leave it, then you should at this present: for others have abandoned their rule, either for desire of ease, or for avoidance of dangers, or upon some sluggish or superstitious devotion: but you for love to your Countrey, shall forbeare to seeke your uttermost remedy, in setting up a most cruell warre: wherein much *English* bloud should bee spilt, and the Realme deprived of many worthy armies. Let others bee reported to forsake their Kingdomes, when they had no longer pleasure to hold them: but your praise shall bee for giving over, when it is greatest benefit unto the people; and the more hope you have to prevaile, if you list to contend, the greater commendations will it bee to yeeld, as being rather voluntary then by constraint.

The King commended the courage of the first, but this last Counsell best agreed with his faint and feeble

Spirit, more yeelding to feare then forward in hope; apt by the one to despaire, unable by the other to hold out in any hard adventure, preferring alwayes abject and base safety, before hazard with honour. Yet were many ready to reply, that all speech of conditions and yeelding was both dishonourable, and also dangerous: for even in hardest haps, said they, a Noble nature will not presently relinquish; but first endeavour either by courage to repell the danger, or by wisedome to decline it: and why should you so little esteeme your glory and fame, as without battell, or blow striken to bind your hands, and yeeld up your weapons, and put your selfe upon miserable mercy: or if the honour of your Noble house doth nothing move you, yet let danger and despaire at least arme you to boldnesse; for neither the Duke nor his friends will bee so confident as to thinke themselves safe, so long as you shall remaine (although in private state) alive. Indeed

deed you may assure your selfe that faire words will bee given, and large offers made: but the performance shall consist in the courtesie of the Conquerour: and nothing will bee thought unlawfull to him that hath power. King *Edward* the second was too heavy to bee indured, even of his owne Sonne: and many have used violence to themselves, rather then they would fall into the power of their concurrents: and doe not you expect more favour or greater fortune then other have found: let never that fond conceite possesse your mind, to imagine that a Prince may live safely in private estate: for in this case there is no meane betweene *Caesar*, and nothing betweene the highest honour & the deadliest downefall. Therefore omit neither all, nor any one meanes unassayed, to maintaine your side by armes: no greater harme can happen at the hardest, then that which willingly you runne into: you can but die if you bee vanquished, and die you shall if you doe yeeld: but by the

one you ſhall end your life with glory, by the other with ſhame and perpetuall reproach. And although you doe now eſteeme equally of both, yet when you ſhall ſee your ſelfe pent in priſon, in dayly feare and expectancy of a bloudy Meſſenger; you ſhall then perceive a difference in death, and find the weakeneſſe and fault of the Councell which you are about to follow. Many like ſpeeches were with great vehemency often repeated, but the Kings eares were ſtopped againſt all impreſſion of manhood: and as hee was unable to governe himſelfe in his proſperous eſtate, ſo was hee much leſſe ſufficient to wind out of theſe intricate troubles. Therefore perceiving himſelfe ſo ſtraitly beſet, that hee could hardly either eſcape away, or ſhift any longer, hee deſired ſpeech with *Thomas Arundel* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and Lord *Henry Pearcy* Earle of *Northumberland*, of whom, the one hee had baniſhed, the other hee had proclaimed Traytour not long

long before. Theſe two came unto him, and the King upon ſhort conference, underſtanding what ſtiff ſtomacks they bare againſt him, was content not to demand that which he ſaw hee could not obtaine: and thereupon agreed that hee would relinquiſh his eſtate, upon condition that an honourable living might be aſſigned him, and life promiſed to eight ſuch perſons as hee would name: the greateſt number whom adverſity did not alter. This was then both readily and faithfully promiſed by the Archbiſhop and the Earle, and afterward ſolemnely ratified by the Duke. The King ceaſed not to entreat ſubmiſly, and promiſe largely; and (as the nature is of men perplexed with feare) above his ability, and without meaſure, the Earle encouraged him, and declared that the Duke before he had obtained any aid, ſecured by his oath the ſafety of the Kings perſon. Then the King deſired to talke with the Duke, which was likewiſe promiſed; and ſo the

Archbishop and the Earle departed, and the King removed to the Castle of *Flint* about eight miles distant from *Chester*, to which place the Duke came to him. Here the countenances and words of both were noted, by them that were present; the King seemed abject and base: the Duke neither insulting nor relenting, but comforting and promising friendly. The King repeated many benefits and kindnesses that hee had shewed how in former time hee had spared the Dukes owne life, and lately his Sonnes; in regard whereof hee desired him, with such submisses as was agreeable rather with his necessity then his honour: that hee would shew some pitty where hee had received such pleasure: and permit him to enjoy his life, with such private maintenance as was convenient for his estate. The Duke put him in good comfort, promising him assuredly, that he would provide for his safety: for which hee suffered himselfe to be solemnly thanked, and thought it

not

not much to have it accounted a great benefit. Indeed from that time the King was kept safe and sure enough from binding any of the Dukes purposes, neither could it so easily have been discerned what had been best for him to doe, as that this which he did was the very worst: for the same night he was brought by the Duke & his army to *Okeston*, and from thence secretly conveyed to the Tower of *London*, there to be kept safe untill the Parliament, which was appointed shortly after to be holden.

Thus the King yeelded himselfe the 20. day of *August*, being the 47. day after the Dukes arrivall: so that his journeyes considered, from *Hundrumsse* in the *North* to *London*: from thence to *Bristow*, and so into *Wales*, and back againe to *Chester*: a man shall not easily travaile over the land in shorter time then he conquered it. So friendly was fortune unto him, that he either found or made a ready passage through all hinderances and lets: and it seemed that hee needed

onely, to open his armes, to meet and receive her, as shee offered herselfe unto him. All the Kings treasure and Iewels, with his horses, and all his fardage came to the Dukes hands; and many that were in his company, were afterwards also despoiled by the souldiers of *Northumberland* and *Wales*.

Some Writers affirme, that the King did not yeeld himselfe, but was forelaid and taken, as he was secretly passing from *Flint* to *Chester*: but the authority of others who lived in that time, either in the plain view, or certaine intelligence of these affaires, who for their place could not but know, & for their profession would not but deliver the very truth, hath drawne mee to follow their report: which I find also received by some late Writers, of as great deapth in judgement and choyce, as any (without exception) that this age hath brought forth.

As the King was carried towards *London*, certaine Citizens conspired to lay themselves in a wait by the way

way, and sodainly to slay him; partly, for private grievances, and partly, for the cruelty that he had used towards the whole City: but the Major upon intelligence prevented the practice, & rod forth in person with a convenient company, to conduct him safely unto the Tower. Shortly after the Duke came to *London* in solemne estate, and sent forth summons in the Kings name, for a Parliament to bee holden at *Westminster*, the last day of *September*, in the same yeare: in the meane time he deliberated with his kindred & kind friends, concerning the order of his proceedings. The Duke of *Yorke* (who a little before had beene Governour of the Realme for the King, & then was the chiefest Director of the Duke) thought it best that King *Richard* should both voluntarily resigne, and also solemnely be deposed, by consent of all the States of the Realme: for resignation onely would be imputed to feare, and deprivation to force; whereof the one is alwayes pitied, & the other en-

vied: but if both concurre, and his desire be combined with his desert, being willing to forsake that which he is adjudged worthy to forgoe, then shall it appeare, that he neither is expelled his Kingdome by meere constraint, nor leaveth it without just cause. This advice pleased the rest, and for executing thereof upon the day of S. *Michael* (which was the day before the Parliament should begin) there assembled at the Tower, *Thomas Arundel* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Richard Scrope* Archbishop of *Yorke*, *John* Bishop of *Hereford*, *Henry* Duke of *Lancaster*, *Henry* Earl of *Northumberland*, *Radulph* Earle of *Westmerland*, Lord *Hugh Burnel*, Lord *Thomas Berkly*, Lord *Rosse*, Lord *Willoughby*, Lord *Abergeny*, The Abbot of *Westminster*, the Prior of *Canterbury*, *William Thirmings*, and *John Markham* Chiefe Justices, *Thomas Stoke*, and *John Burbeck*, Doctours of Law, *Thomas Harpingham*, and *Thomas Gray* Knights, *William Ferby*, and *Dionise Lapham* publike Notaries, and divers

others

others either not noted, or not remembred. When all were set in their places, King *Richard* was brought forth, apparelled in his Royall robe, the diademe on his head, & the Scepter in his hand; and was placed amongst them in a Chaire of estate. Never was Prince so gorgeous, with lesse glory and greater griefe: to whom it was not disgrace sufficient, to lose both the honour and ornaments of a King, but hee must openly to his greater scorne, renounce the one, and deliver the other. After a little pause and expectation, the King arose from his seat, and spake to the assembly these words, or the very like in effect.

I assure my self that some at this present, & many hereafter, will accompt my case lamentable; either that I have deserved this defection, if it be just; or if it be wrongfull, that I could not avoid it. Indeed I do confess that many times I have shewed my selfe both lesse provident, & lesse painful for the benefit of the Common-wealth, then I should,

I should, or might; or intended to doe hereafter; and have in many actions more respected the satisfying of my owne particular humour, then either justice to some private persons, or the common good of all, yet I did not at any time either omit duty or commit grievance, upon naturall dulnes or set malice; but partly, by abuse of corrupt Counsellors, partly, by errour of my youthfull judgement. And now the remembrance of these oversights, is so unpleasant to no man, as to my selfe, and the rather because I have no meanes left, either to recompence the injuries which I have done, or to testifie to the World my reformed affections, which experience and stayednesse of yeares had already corrected, and would dayly have framed to more perfection. But whether all the imputations, wherewith I am charged be true, either in substance, or in such quality as they are laid, or whether being true, they be so heinous, as to inforce these extremities, or whether any other Prince,

espe-

especially in the heate of youth, and in the space of two and twenty yeares (the time of my unfortunate raigne) doth not sometimes either for advantage, or upon displeasure, in as deepe manner grieve some particular subject; I will not now examine: it helpeth not to vse defence, neither booteth it to make complaint: there is left no place for the one, nor pitty for the other: and therefore I referre it to the judgement of God, and your lesse distempered considerations.

I accuse no man, I blame no fortune, I complaine of nothing: I have no pleasure in such vaine and needlesse comforts; and if I listed to have stood upon termes, I know I have great favourers abroad; and some friends (I hope) at home, who would have beene ready, yea forward on my behalfe, to set up a bloudy and doubtfull warre: but I esteeme not my dignity at so high a prize, at the hazard of so great value, the spilling of so much *English* bloud, and the spoile and wast of so flourishing a Realme, as thereby

thereby might have beene occasioned. Therefore that the Commonwealth may rather rise by my fall, then I stand by the ruine thereof, I willingly yeeld to your desires, and am heere come to dispossesse my selfe to all publike authority and title, and to make it free and lawfull for you to create for your King, *Henry* Duke of *Lancaster* my Cousin *Germaine*, whom I know to be as worthy to take that place, as I see you willing to give it to him.

Then he read openly and distinctly the forme of his cession, wherein he did declare, that he had discharged his subjects from their oaths of fealty and homage, & all other oaths whatsoever; and of his owne will and free motion, did abdicate the title dignity, and authority of a King: and rendred up the possession of the Realm, with the use and title thereof, and all the rights thereunto appertaining. To this the King subscribed and was sworne: and then he delivered with his owne hands the Crowne, the Scepter,

Scepter, and the Robe to the Duke of *Lancaster*; wishing unto him more happinesse therewith, then had ever happened unto himselfe. Then he did constitute the Archbishop of *Yorke*, and the Bishop of *Hereford* his Procuratours, to intimate and declare this his resignation to all the States of the Realme, which should be assembled together in Parliament. Lastly hee gave all his riches and goods, to the summe of three hundred thousand pounds in coine, besides his Iewels and plate, for satisfaction of the injuries that hee had done, desiring the Duke, and all the rest that were present severally by their names, not altogether to forget that he had beene their King, nor yet too much to thinke upon the same; but to retaine of him a moderate remembrance; and in recompence of the ease that he had done them by his voluntary yeelding, to permit him to live safely, in a private and obscure life; with the sweetnesse whereof he was so possessed, that from thence-

forth

forth he would preferre it, before any preferment in the World. All this was delivered and done by the King, with voyce and countenance ſo agreeable to his preſent heavineſſe, that there was no man too unmindefull of humane inſtability, which was not in ſome meaſure moved thereat: in ſo much as a few ſecret teares melted from the eyes of many that were preſent, in whoſe minds a confuſed and obſcure alteration gan to begin. So prone and inclinable are men to pitty miſery, although they have procured it, and to envy proſpery, even that which they have raiſed.

Upon Munday next following, the Parliament beganne at *Weſtminſter*; and the Archbiſhop of *Yorke* and the Biſhop of *Hereford* (the Kings Attornies for this purpoſe) declared openly to the States there aſſembled, the Kings voluntary reſignation; and demanded whether they would aſſent and agree thereunto? the Barons of the Realme by ſeverall and particular conſent, the Commons with one

one generall voice, did expresly accept and admit the same. Then it was thought meet that certaine defects and misdemeanures concerning matters of government, should bee objected against the King: for which he should be adjudged as unworthy, as hee seemed unwilling to retaine the Kingdome. To this purpose certaine articles were engrossed, and openly read: in which was contained, how unprofitable the King had beene to the Realme; how iniust and grievous to the subjects: contrary both to his honour, and to his oath. The chiefest of which Articles are these that follow.

1 FIrst, that King *Richard* did wastfully spend the Treasure of the Realme, and had given the possession of the Crowne, to men unworthy, by reason whereof, new charges were dayly laid on the necks of the poore Comminalty.

2 Item, Where divers Lords as well Spirituall as Temporall, were

were appointed by the High Court of Parliament, to commune and treat of matters concerning the State of the Realme, and the Commonwealth of the same, they being busied about the same commission he with with others of his affinity went about to impeach them of treason.

3 Item, that by force and menace, hee compelled the Justices of the Realme at *Shrewsbury*, to condiscend to his opinion for the destruction of the said Lords: Insomuch as he beganne to raise warre, against *John* Duke of *Lancaster*, *Thomas* Earle of *Arundel*, *Richard* Earle of *Warwick*, and other Lords contrary to his honour and promise.

4 Item, that he caused his Vncle the Duke of *Glocester*, to be arrested without law, and sent him to *Calis*, and there without judgement murthered him: and although the Earle of *Arundel* upon his arraignement, pleaded his charter of pardon, he could not bee heard, but was in

most

moſt vile and ſhameſull manner ſodainly put to death.

5 Item, he aſſembled certaine *Lancaſhire* and *Cheſhire* men, to the intent to make warre on the aforeſaid Lords, and ſuffered them to robbe and ſpoile, without correction and reproofe.

6 Item, that although the King flatteringly and with great diſſimulation, made proclamation throughout the Realme, that the Lords aforenamed were not attached for any crime of treaſon, but onely for extortions and oppreſſions done within the Realme, yet hee laid to them in the Parliament rebellion with manifeſt treaſon.

7 Item, hee hath compelled divers of the ſaid Lords ſervants by menace, to make groſſe fines and extreme payments, to their utter undoing: and notwithſtanding his pardon to them granted, he made them fine a new.

8 Item, where divers were appointed

ted to commune of the estate of the Realme, and the Common-wealth of the same, the King caused all the roules and records to bee kept from them, contrary to his promise made in Parliament, to his open dishonour.

9 Item, hee uncharitably commanded that no man upon paine of losse of life and goods, should once intreat him for the returne of *Henry*, now Duke of *Lancaster*.

10 Item, where the Realme is houlden of God, and not of the Pope, or any other Prince, the said King *Richard*, after hee had obtained divers acts of Parliament, for his owne peculiar profit and pleasure, then hee procured Bulles and extreame censures from *Rome* to compell all men streightly to keepe the same, contrary to the honour and ancient privileges of this Realme.

11 Item, although the Duke of *Lancaster* had done his devoire against *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolke*, in

proofe

proofe of his quarrell, yet the ſaid King without reaſon or ground, baniſhed him the Realme for tenne yeares, contrary to all equity.

12 Item, before the Dukes departure, hee under his broad Seale, licenſed him to make Atturneyes, to proſecute and defend his cauſes: the ſaid King after his departure, would ſuffer none Atturney to appeare for him, but did with his at his pleaſure.

13 Item, the ſaid King put out divers Sheriffes lawfully elected, and put in their roomes divers others of his owne minions, ſubverting the law, contrary to his oath and honour.

14 Item, hee borrowed great ſummes of money, and bound himſelfe under his Letters patents for the repayment of the ſame, and yet not one penny paid.

15 Item, he taxed men at the will of him, and his unhappy Counſaile, and the ſame Treaſure ſpent in folly, not

not paying poore men for their victaile and viand.

16 Item, he said that the lawes of the Realme were in his head, and sometimes in his breast: by reason of which phantasticall opinion, hee destroyed Noble men, and impoverished the poore Commons.

17 Item, the Parliament setting and enacting divers notable Statutes, for the profit and advancement of the Common wealth, he by his privy friends and solicitours, caused to bee enacted, that no act then enacted should bee more prejudiciall to him then it was to his Predecessours: thorow which *proviso*, he did often as hee list, and not as the law meant.

18 Item, for to serve his purpose, he would suffer the Sheriffes of the Shires, to remaine above one yeare or two in their office.

19 Item, at the summons of Parliament, when the Knights and Burgesses should bee elected, and the

elec-

election had fully proceeded, hee put out diuers persons elected and put in others in their places, to serue his will and appetite.

20 Item, hee had priuy espials in every Shire, to heare who had of him any communication, and if hee communed of his lasciuious liuing, and outragious doing, hee straightwayes was apprehended and made a grieuous fine.

21 Item, the Spiritualty alledged against him, that hee at his going into *Ireland*, exacted many notable summes of money, beside Plate and Iewels, without law or custome, contrary to his oath taken at his coronation.

22 Item, when diuers Lords and Iustices were sworne to say the truth, of diuers things to them committed in charge, both for the honour of the Realme and profit of the King, the said King so menaced them with sore threatnings, that no man would or durst say the right.

23 Item,

23 Item, that without the assent of the Nobility, he carried the Iewels and Plate, and Treasure, over the Sea into *Ireland*, to the great impoverishing of the Realme; and all the good Records of the Commonwealth, against his extortions, hee caused privily to bee embeaseled and carried away.

24 Item, in all leagues and letters to bee concluded and sent to the Sea of *Rome*, and other Regions, his writing was so subtill and darke, that no other Prince durst once believe him, not yet his owne Subjects.

25 Item, hee most tyrannously and unprincely said, that the lives and goods of all his Subjects, were in the Princes hands, and at his disposition.

26 Item, that hee contrary to the great Charter of *England*, caused divers lusty men to appeale divers old men, upon matters determinable at the Common law, in the Court Marciall, because that in that Court is no triall but only by battaile:

taile: whereby the ſaid aged perſons fearing the ſequell of the matter, ſubmitted themſelves to his mercy, whom hee fined and ranſomed unreaſonably at his pleaſure.

27 Item, he craftily deviſed certaine priuy oathes, contrary to Law, and cauſed divers of his ſubjects, firſt to be ſworne to obſerve the ſame, and after bound them in bands for ſurer keeping the ſame, to the great undoing of many honeſt men.

28 Item, where the Chancellor according to law, would in no wiſe grant a prohibition to a certaine perſon, the King granted it unto the ſame perſon under his privie Seale, with great threatnings if it ſhould be diſobeyed.

29 Item, he baniſhed the Biſhop of *Canterbury*, without cauſe or judgement, and kept him in the Parliament Chamber with men of armes.

30 Item, the Biſhops goods hee granted to his ſucceſſor, upon condition that hee ſhould maintaine all his

ſtatutes made at *Shrewsbury*, *Anno* 21. and the ſtatutes made, *Anno* 22. at *Coventree*.

31 Item, upon the accuſation of the Archbiſhop, the King craftily perſwaded the ſaid Biſhop to make no anſwer, for he would be his warrant, and adviſed him not to come to the Parliament; and ſo without anſwer hee was condemned, and exiled, and his goods ſeazed. Foure other Articles were laid, which particularly did concerne the ſaid Archbiſhop, by whoſe doing chiefly the King was utterly undone.

Then was demanded of the Nobility and Commons of the Realme, what they judged both of the truth and deſert of theſe Articles? who all agreed that the crimes were notorious, and that King *Richard* was worthy for the ſame to be depoſed from his princely dignity. The noble men gave their voyces, part corrupted by favour, part awed by feare: and the Commons are commonly like a flocke of Cranes, as one

one doth fly all will follow. Hereupon Commiſſioners were appointed by both the Houſes; who pronounced ſentence of depoſition againſt King *Richard*, in manner and forme as followeth.

In the name of God, Amen. Wee, Iohn Biſhop of S. Aſſes, *I.* Abbot of *Glaſtenbury*, Thomas Earle of Glouceſter, Thomas *Lord* Bekley, Thomas *Erpinghaime*, Thomas Gray *Knights*: William Therning, *Juſtice, Commiſſioners for the matters hereafter ſpecified, by the Lords ſpirituall and temporall of the Realme of* England, *and the Commons of the ſaid Realme, repreſenting all the States of the ſaid Kingdome, ſpecially deputed, ſitting in ſeate of judgement, and conſidering the manifold iniuries, and cruelties, and many other crimes and offences by* Richard *late King of the ſaid Realm committed and done, contrary to good governement in the Realmes and Dominions aforeſaid, during the time of his Raigne: alſo*

considering the articles which were openly exhibited and read before the said States, which were so publike, notorious, manifest, and famous, that they could nor can by no avoydance and shift bee concealed: also considering the confession of the said King, acknowledging and reputing, and truly upon his certaine knowledge judging himselfe, to have beene, and to be altogether insufficient and unskilfull, for the rule and government of the Realmes and Dominions aforesaid, and of any parts of them, and not unworthy to bee deposed for the notorious demerits, by the said Richard first acknowledged, and afterward by his will and mandate, before the said States published, and to them opened and declared in the English tongue. Vpon these and other matters which were done concerning the same businesse, before the said States and us, by the diligent place, name and authority to us in this part committed, in a bound wee and for a cautele wee pronounce, decree, and declare, the said Richard, to have beene, and to be unprofitable

ſitable and unable, and altogether unſufficient and unworthy for the rule and government of the ſaid Realmes, and of the Dominions, Rights, and parts of them: and in regard and reſpect of the premiſes, worthily to bee diſpoſed from all kingly dignity and honour (if any ſuch dignity and honour remaineth in him) and for the like cautele wee doe depoſe him by our ſentence definitive, in this writing: inhibiting from henceforth expreſly, all and ſingular Lords, Archbiſhops, Biſhops, Prelates, Dukes, Marqueſſes and Earles, Barons, Knights, Vaſſalles, and all other perſons whatſoever, of the ſaid Realms and Dominions, and other places to the ſaid Realmes and Dominions appertaining, the ſubjects and liege people of the ſame, and every of them, that from henceforth none obey, or intend to obey the aforeſaid Richard, *as King or Lord of the Realmes and Dominions aforeſaid.*

Then the ſame Commiſſioners were by the conſent and ſuffrages of both houſes, conſtituted Procura-

tors, joyntly and ſeverally for all the States of the Realme; to reſigne and ſurrender unto King *Richard*, for them and all other homages of the Realme, all the homages and fealties which were both due and done unto him, as King and Soveraigne, and alſo to declare unto him all the premiſes, concerning his depoſition. Now *Henry* Duke of *Lancaſter*, that hee might bee reputed, or reported at the leaſt, not to attaine the Kingdome by intruſion and wrong, was counſailed by his friends, to pretend ſome lawfull challenge and claime thereunto: and being in power, it was no ſooner adviſed what was to bee done, but it was preſently deviſed how to doe it. So a title was drawne from *Edmund*, ſonne to King *Henry* the third, whom they ſurnamed Crouch-backe: affirming that hee was the eldeſt ſonne of King *Henry*, and that for his deformity, hee was put from his right of ſucceſſion in the Kingdome; which was for that cauſe given to his younger brother,

ther, King *Edward* the third; to this *Edmund* the Duke was next of blood by his mother *Blanche*, ſole daughter and heyre to *Henry* the firſt Duke of *Lancaſter*, and ſonne to the ſaid *Edmund*. This cunning conceit was perceived of all men, but ſeeming not to perceive it, was a point of friendſhip in ſome, and of obedience in the reſt: therefore the Kingdome of *England* being then thought vacant, both by the reſignation, and alſo by the depoſition of King *Richard*: Duke *Henry* aroſe from his ſeat, and ſtanding in the view of the Lords, croſſed himſelfe on the fore-head, and on the breſt, and ſpake as followeth.

In the name of God, Amen: I Henry *of Lancaſter, claime the realme of* England, *and the Crown, with all the appurtenances, as I that am deſcended by right line of the blood royall, comming from that good Lord K.* Henry *the third, & through the right that God of his grace hath ſent me, with the helpe of my kindred,*

and of my friends, to recover the ſame: Which kingdome was in point to be undone, for default of good government and due juſtice.

After theſe words, it was demanded in both houſes, of the Nobility and of the Commons which were aſſembled, whether they did conſent, that the Duke ſhould raign? who all with one voyce acknowledged and accepted him for their King: then the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* tooke him by the hand, and placed him in the Throne of eſtate, the Archbiſhop of *Yorke* aſſiſting him, and all the aſſembly teſtifying their owne joy, and wiſhing his. Then the Archbiſhop made an Oration, and tooke for his theame, this place of Scripture: *See, this is the man whom I ſpake to thee of, this ſame ſhall raigne over my people*, 1 *Reg.* 9 17. After all this hee was proclaymed King of *England*, and of *France*, and Lord of *Ireland*: and the common people which is void of cares, not ſearching into ſequels, but with-

without difference of right or wrong inclinable to follow those that are mighty, with shoutes and clamours gave their applause, not all upon judgement, or faithfull meaning, but most only upon a received custome to flatter the Prince whatsoever he be. Yet least the heat of this humour should allay by delay, it was forthwith proclaimed in the great Hall, that upon the 13. day of September next ensuing, the Coronation of the King should be celebrated at *Westminster*. These matters being thus dispatched, the K. proclaimed, arose from his seat, and went to *White-Hall*: where hee spent the rest of day in royall feasting, and all other complements of joy: notwithstanding there appeared in him no token of statelinesse or pride, nor any change in so great a change.

Vpon Wednesday next following, the Procurators, before mentioned, went to the presence of King *Richard*, being within the Tower; and declared unto him the admission

of his resignation, and also the order and forme of his deposition: and in the name of all the States of the realm, did surrender the homage and fealty which had bin due unto him; so that no man from thenceforth would bear to him faith and obedience, as to their King. The King answered that he nothing regarded these titular circumstances, but contented himselfe with hope, that his cousen would be a gracious Lord, and good friend unto him.

So upon the 13. day of October, which was the day of the translation of *Edward* the Confessor, the Duke was with all accustomed solemnities, by the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, sacred, annoynted, and crowned King at *Westminster*, by the name of King *Henry* the fourth: upon the very same day, wherein the yeare before he had bin banished the Realme. Hee was annoynted with an oyle, which a certain religious man gave unto *Henry* the first, Duke of *Lancaster*, (Grandfather to the King by the mothers side) when he served in the wars

of

of King *Edward* the third, beyond the ſeas; together with this Propheſie; that the Kings which ſhould bee annoynted therewith, ſhould bee the Champions of the Church. Duke *Henry* delivered this oyle in a golden violl to Prince *Edward*, the eldeſt ſonne of King *Edward* the third; who locked up the ſame in a barred Cheſt within the Tower, with intent to be annoynted therewith, when he ſhould be crowned King: but the Prince dying before his Father, it remayned there, either not remembred, or not regarded, untill this preſent yeare; wherein the King, being upon his voyage into *Ireland*, and making diligent ſearch for the Iewels and Monuments of his Progenitors, found this Violl and Propheſie: and underſtanding the ſecret, was deſirous to bee annoynted againe with that oyle: but the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* perſwaded him, that both the fact was unlawfull, and the

pre-

precedent unseen, that a King should be annoynted twice: whereupon he brake off that purpose, and took the violl with him into *Ireland*: and when he yeelded himselfe at Flint, the Archbishop of *Canterbury* demanded it of him againe, and did receive and reserve the same, untill the coronation of King *Henry*; who was the first King of this Realme, that was annoynted therewith.

I am not purposed to discourse, either of the authority, or of the certainty of these prophesies: but wee may easily observe, that the greatest part of them, either altogether fayled, or were fulfilled in another sense, then as they were commonly construed and taken. During the raigne of King *Henry* the fourth, execution by fire was first put in practise within this Realme, for controversies in points of religion: in any other extraordinary matter, hee did as much make the Church Champion, as shew himselfe a Champion of the Church: but afterwards his suc-

ſucceſſors were intitule, *Defenders of the faith*: and how in action they verified the ſame, I refer to remembrance, and report of later times.

Now it had beene conſidered, that the title which was derived to King *Henry*, from *Edmund*, whom they ſurnamed *Crouchbacke*, would be taken but for a blind and idle jeſt: for that it was notorious that the ſaid *Edmund* was neither eldeſt ſonne to King *Henry* the third (as it was plainely declared by an act of Parliament) nor yet a miſhapen and deformed perſon: but a goodly Gentleman, and valiant Commander in the field, and ſo favoured of the King his Father, that hee gave him both the heritages and honours of *Simon Mountfort* Earle of *Leiceſter*, of *Ferrare*, Earle of *Darby*, and of *John* Baron of *Monmuth*, who to their owne ruine and deſtruction, had diſplayed ſeditious enſignes againſt the King. And further to advance him to the marriage of *Blanch* Queene of *Navarre*, hee created him

the first Earle of *Lancaster*, and gave unto him the County, Castle, and Towne of *Lancaster*, with the Forrests of Wiresdale Lounsdale, New-castle, beneath Linne, the Manner, Castle, and Forrest of Pickering, the Manner of Scaleby, the Towne of *Gomecester*, of *Huntendone*, &c. with many large priviledges, and high titles of honour.

Therefore King *Henry* upon the day of his Coronation, caused to bee proclaymed, that hee claymed the kingdome of *England*, first by right of conquest: Secondly, because King *Richard* had resigned his estate, and designed him for his successour: Lastly, because hee was of the blood royall, and next heyre male unto King *Richard*.

Heres malus indeed (quoth *Edmund Mortimer*, Earle of March, unto his secret friends) and so is the Pyrate to the Merchant, when hee despoyleth him of all that he hath. This *Edmund* was sonne to *Roger Mortimer*, who was not long before slaine

ſlaine in *Ireland*, and had beene openly declared heyre apparent to the Crowne, in caſe King *Richard* ſhould dye without iſſue, as deſcended by his Mother *Philip*, from *Lionell*, Duke of *Clarence*, who was elder brother to *Iohn* Duke of *Lancaſter*, King *Henries* Father: and therefore the ſaid *Edmund* thought himſelfe, and indeed was, neerer heyre male to the ſucceſſion of the Crowne, then hee that by colour of right, clayming it, carried it by dint of force.

But ſuch was the condition of the time, that hee ſuppoſed it was vaine, for him to ſtirre, where King *Richard* could not ſtand: Whereupon hee diſſembled, either that hee ſaw his wrong, or that hee regarded it; and choſe rather to ſuppreſſe his title for a time, then by untimely oppoſing himſelfe, to have it oppreſſed and depreſſed for ever: to this end hee withdrew himſelfe farre from *London*, to his Lordſhip of *Wigmore*, in

in the West parts of the Realme, and there setled himselfe to a private and close life: Idlenesse and vacancy from publike affaires, he accounted a vertue, and a deepe point of wisdome to meddle with nothing, whereof no man was chargeable to yeeld a reckoning. In revenues hee was meane, in apparell moderate, in company and traine not excessive, (yet in all these honourable, and according to his degree) so that they which esteemed men by outward appearance only, could see in him no great shew, either of wit and courage in his mind to be feared; or of wealth and honour in his estate to bee envied. And thus whilest a greater enemy was feared, hee passed unregarded; making himselfe safe by contempt, where nothing was so dangerous as a good opinion; and raking up those coales in obscurity for a time, which shortly after set all the Realme on fire.

King *Henry* presently after his coronation, created his eldest sonne Lord

Lord *Henry*, being then about xiii. yeares of age, Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornewall*, and Earle of *Cheſter*, and ſoone after he created him alſo Duke of *Aquitaine*. Afterwards it was enacted, by conſent of all the ſtates of the Realme, aſſembled together in the Parliament, that the inheritance of the Crownes and Realmes of *England*, and of *France*, and of all the Dominions to them appertaining, ſhould bee united and remaine in the perſon of King *Henry*, and in the heires of his body lawfully begotten: and that Prince *Henry* his eldeſt ſonne, ſhould be his heyre apparant, and ſucceſſor in the premiſes: and if hee ſhould dye without lawfull iſſue, then they were entayled to his other ſonnes ſucceſſively in order, and to the heyres of their bodies lawfully begotten.

The inheritance of the Kingdome being in this ſort ſetled in King *Henry* and in his line, it was moved in the parliament what ſhould be done with

King

King *Richard*. The Biſhop of *Caerliel*, who was a man learned and wiſe, and one that alwayes uſed both liberty and conſtancy in a good cauſe; in his ſecret judgement did never give allowance to theſe proceedings: yet diſſembled his diſlike untill hee might to ſome purpoſe declare it: therefore now being in place to be heard of all, and by order of the houſe, to be interrupted by none, hee roſe up and with a bold and preſent ſpirit, uttered his mind as followeth.

This queſtion (right honourable Lords) concerneth a matter of great conſequence and weight: the determining whereof will aſſuredly procure, either ſafe quiet, or dangerous diſturbance, both to our particular conſciences, and alſo to the common ſtate. Therefore before you reſolve upon it, I pray you call to your conſiderations theſe two things: Firſt, whether King *Richard* be ſufficiently depoſed or no: Secondly, whether King *Henry* beo with good judge-

ment

ment or juſtice choſen in his place. For the firſt point we are firſt to examine, whether a King, being lawfully and fully inſtituted by any juſt title, may upon imputation either of negligence, or of tyrannie, be depoſed by his ſubjects: Secondly, what King *Richard* hath omitted in the one, or committed in the other, for which hee ſhould deſerve ſo heavy judgement. I will not ſpeake what may be done in a popular ſtate, or in a Conſular; in which although one beareth the name and honour of a Prince, yet hee hath not ſupreme power of Majeſtie; but in the one, the people have the higheſt Empire; in the other, the Nobility, and chiefe men of eſtate; in neither, the Prince. Of the firſt ſort was the common-wealth of the Lacedæmoans, who after the form of government wch *Licurgus* framed, oftentimes fined, oftentimes fettered their kings, and ſometimes condemned them to death: ſuch were alſo in *Ceſars* time, the petty Kings of

of every Citie in *France*; who were many times arraigned upon life and death, and (as *Ambiorix* Prince of the *Leodienſes* confeſſed) had no greater power over the people, then the people had over them. Of the ſecond condition were the Roman Emperours at the firſt; of whom ſome, namely, *Nero* and *Maximinus* were openly condemned, others were ſuddenly ſurprized by judgement, and authority of the Senate: and ſuch are now the Emperors of *Germany*, whom the other Princes by their Ariſtocraticall power, doe not only reſtraine, but ſometimes alſo remove from their Imperiall ſtate: ſuch are alſo the Kings of *Denmarke*, and *Sweveland*, who are many times by the Nobility dejected, either into priſon, or into exile: ſuch likewiſe are the Dukes of *Venice*, and of ſome other free ſtates in *Italy*: and the chiefeſt cauſe for which *Lewes* Earle of *Flaunders* was lately expelled from his place, was for drawing to himſelfe cogniſance in matters of life

Tranquil. in Caligula.
Tacitus in Proæmio.

and

and death, which high power never pertained to his dignity.

In theſe and ſuch like governments, the Prince hath not regall rights, but is himſelfe ſubject to that power which is greater then his, whether it bee in the Nobility or in the common people. But if the Soveraigne Majeſty be in the Prince, as it was in the three firſt Empires, and in the Kingdome of *Iudea*, and *Iſrael*; and is now in the kingdomes of *England*, *France*, *Spaine*, *Scotland*, *Muſcovia*, *Turky*, *Tartaria*, *Perſia*, *Ethiopia*, and almoſt all the kingdomes of *Aſia*, and *Africke*: although for his vices he be unprofitable to the ſubjects, yea hurtfull, yea intollerable: yet can they lawfully neither harme his perſon, nor hazard his power, whether by judgement, or elſe by force: for neither one, nor all Magiſtrates have any authority over the Prince, from whom all authority is derived, and whoſe only preſence doth ſilence, and ſuſpend all inferiour juriſdiction

and

and power. As for force, what ſubject can attempt, or aſſiſt, or counſaile, or conceale violence againſt his Prince, and not incurre the high and hainous crime of treaſon?

It is a common ſaying, thought is free: free indeed from puniſhment of ſecular lawes, except by word or deed it breake forth into action: Yet the ſecret thoughts againſt the ſacred Majeſty of a Prince, without attempt, without endeavour, have beene adjudged worthy of death: and ſome who in auriculer confeſſion, have diſcovered their treacherous deviſes againſt the perſon of their Prince, have afterwards been executed for the ſame. All Lawes doe exempt a mad man from puniſhment: becauſe their actions are not governed by their will and purpoſe: and the will of man being ſet aſide, all his doings are indifferent, neither can the body offend without a corrupt or erronious mind: yet if a mad man draw his ſword upon his King,

it

it hath beene adjudged to deſerve death. And leſt any man ſhould ſurmiſe that Princes, for the maintenance of their owne ſafety and ſoveraignety, are the onely Authors of theſe judgements; let us a little conſider the Patternes and Precepts of Holy Scripture. *Nebuchadnezzar* King of *Aſſyria*, waſted all *Paleſtine* with fire and ſword, oppugned *Hieruſalem* a long time, and at the laſt expugned it: ſlue the King: burnt the Temple: tooke away the Holy Veſſels and Treaſure: the reſt hee permitted to the cruelty and ſpoyle of his unmercifull ſouldiers: who defiled all places with rape and ſlaughter, and ruinated to the ground that flouriſhing Citie: after the glut of this bloody butchery, the people which remayned, he led captive into *Chaldea*: and there erected his golden Image; and commanded that they which refuſed to worſhip it, ſhould bee caſt into a fiery Furnace.

What

What cruelty, what injustice, what impiety is comparable to this? and yet God calleth *Nebuchadnezzar* his servant, and promiseth hyre and wages for his service: and the Prophets *Ieremiah* and *Baruch* did write unto the Iewes to pray for the life of him, and of *Baltazar* his sonne, that their dayes might bee upon earth as the dayes of Heaven: and *Ezechiel* with bitter termes abhorteth the disloyalty of *Zedechia*, because he revolted from *Nebuchadnezzar*, whose homager and tributary he was. What shall we say of *Saul*? did hee not put all the Priests to execution, because one of them did relieve holy and harmelesse *David*? did hee not violently persecute that his most faithfull servant and dutifull sonne in law? during which pursuit, he fell twice into the power of *David*; who did not only spare, but also protect the King, and reproved the Pretorian souldiers for their negligent watch, and was touched in heart for cutting away the lap of his garment: and after-

Ier. 25 9. Ezech. 29 18. Ier. 29 7. Bacuch. 1 11.

afterwards cauſed the Meſſenger to bee ſlaine, who upon requeſt and for pitty, had lent his hand (as hee ſaid) to help forward the voluntary death of that ſacred King. As for the contrary examples: as that of * *Iehu* who ſlew *Ichoram* and *Ahazia*, Kings of *Iſrael* and *Iuda*: they were done by expreſſe oracle and revelation from God, and are no more ſet downe for our imitation, then the robbing of the *Ægyptians*, or any other particular and priviledged Commandement; but in the generall Precept, which all men muſt ordinarily follow, not onely our actions, but our ſpeeches alſo, and our very thoughts are ſtrictly charged with duty and obedience unto Princes, whether they bee good or evill, the law of

* So did *Domitian* put to death *Epaphroditus*, *Neroes* libertine, becauſe he helped *Nero* (although in love) to kill himſelfe. So did *Severus* kill all the killers of *Pertinax* his Predeceſſour; and likewiſe *Vitellius* did put to death all the murtherers of *Galba*. *Theophilus* Emperour of *Grecia* cauſed all thoſe to bee ſlaine, who had made his Father Emperour, by killing *Leo Armenius*. And *Alexander* the great put to cruell execution, thoſe that had ſlaine *Darius* his mighty and mortall enemy.

Deut. 17. 12. Pſal. 105. Exod. 22. 28. Act. 23. 5. Rom. 13. 1. 13. Tit. 3. 1. 1 Pet. 2. 13, 14, 17. 2 Tim. 2. 2

God ordaineth: *That hee which doth preſumptuouſly againſt the Ruler of the people ſhall dye:* and the Prophet *David* forbiddeth, to touch the Lords annointed. *Thou ſhalt not* (ſaith the Lord) *raile upon the Iudges, neither ſpeake evill againſt the Ruler of the people.* And the Apoſtles doe demand further, that even our thoughts and ſoules be obedient to higher powers. And leaſt any ſhould imagine that they meant of good Princes onely, they ſpeake generally of all; and further to take away all doubt, they make expreſſe mention of the evill. For the power and authority of wicked Princes is the ordinance of God; and therefore

Rom. 13. 2.

Iohn 19. 11.

CHRIST told *Pilate*, that the power which hee had was given him from above; and the Prophet

Cap. 45. 1.

Eſay calleth *Cyrus*, being a Prophane and Heathen Prince, the Lords annointed. For God ſtirred up the Spirit even of wicked Princes to doe his will; and (as *Iehoſaphat* ſaid to his

2 Chron. 36. 22.

Rulers) they execute not the judge-

ment

ment of man, but of the Lord: in regard whereof *David* calleth them Gods; becauſe they have their rule and authority immediately from God: which if they abuſe, they are not to bee adjudged by their Subjects, for no power within their Dominion is ſuperiour to theirs: but God reſerveth them to the ſoreſt triall: *Horribly and ſodainly* (ſaith the *Wiſeman*) *will the Lord appeare unto them, and a hard judgement ſhall they have.* 2 Chron. 19. 6. Pſal. 28. Sap. 6.

The law of God commandeth, that the Childe ſhould bee put to death, for any contumely done unto the Parents: but what if the Father bee a robber? if a murtherer? if for all exceſſe of villanies, odious and execrable both to God and man? ſurely hee deſerveth the higheſt degree of puniſhment, and yet muſt not the Sonne lift up his hand againſt him, for no offence is ſo great as to bee puniſhed by parricide: but our Countrey is deerer unto us then our Parents: and the Prince is *Pater patriæ,* Quintil. in declam. Cic. offic. lib. 1.

tria, the Father of our Countrey: and therefore more ſacred and deere unto us, then our Parents by nature, and muſt not bee violated, how imperious, how impious ſo ever hee bee: doth hee command or demand, our perſons or our purſes, wee muſt not ſhunne for the one, nor ſhrinke for the other: for (as *Nehemiah* ſaith,) *Kings have Dominion over the bodies and over the cattle of their Subjects, at their pleaſure.* Doth hee enjoyne thoſe actions which are contrary to the lawes of God? wee muſt neither wholy obey, nor violently reſiſt, but with a conſtant courage ſubmit our ſelves to all manner of puniſhment, and ſhew our ſubjection by enduring, and not performing: yea the Church hath declared it to bee an Hereſie, to hold that a Prince may be ſlaine or depoſed by his Subjects, for any diſorder or default, either in life, or elſe in government, there will bee faults ſo long as there are men: and as we endure with patience a barren yeare, if it happen, and unſeaſona-

Nehem 9. 37.

Alphonſ. a caſt in lib. de hæreſ. in verb. Tiran. Dom sot. lib 5. de juſt. & jur. q. 1 artic. 3.

ſonable weather, and ſuch other defects of nature. ſo muſt wee tollerate the imperfections of Rulers and quietly expect, either reformation, or elſe a change.

But alas good King *Richard*, what ſuch cruelty? what ſuch impiety hath he ever committed? examine rightly thoſe imputations which are laid againſt him, without any falſe circumſtance of aggravation, and you ſhall find nothing objected, either of any truth, or of great moment. It may bee that many errours and overſights have eſcaped him, yet none ſo grievous to bee termed tyranny; as proceeding rather from unexperienced ignorance, or corrupt counſaile, then from any naturall and wilfull malice. Oh, how ſhall the World bee peſtered with Tyrants, if Subjects may rebell upon every pretence of tyranny? how many good Princes ſhall dayly bee ſuppreſſed by thoſe, by whom they ought to bee ſupported? if they leavy a ſubſidy, or any other taxation, it ſhall

bee claimed oppreſſion: if they put any to death for trayterous attempts againſt their Perſons, it ſhall bee exclaimed cruelty: if they doe any thing againſt the luſt and liking of the people, it ſhall bee proclaimed tyranny.

But let it bee, that without authority in us, or deſert in him, King *Richard* muſt bee depoſed: yet what right had the Duke of *Lancaſter* to the Crowne? or what reaſon have wee without his right to give it to him? if hee make title as Heire unto King *Richard*, then muſt hee yet ſtay untill King *Richards* death: for no man can ſucceed as Heire to one that liveth. But it is well knowne to all men, who are not either wilfully blind or groſſely ignorant, that there are ſome now alive. Lineally deſcended from *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, whoſe off-ſpring was by judgement of the High Court of Parliament holden the eight yeare of the raigne of King *Richard*, declared next Succeſſour to the Crowne,

Crowne, in caſe King *Richard* ſhould dye without iſſue. Concerning the title from *Edmund Crouchback*, I will paſſe it over, ſeeing the authours thereof are become aſhamed of ſo ablurd abuſe, both of their owne knowledge and our credulity, and therefore all the claime is now made, by right of conqueſt; by the ceſſion and grant of King *Richard*; and by the generall conſent of all the people. It is a bad wooll that can take no colour: but what conqueſt can a Subject pretend againſt his Soveraigne, where the warre is inſurrection, and the victory high and heinous treaſon? as for the reſignation which King *Richard* made, being a pent Priſoner for the ſame cauſe; it is an act exacted by force: and therefore of no force and validity to bind him: and ſeeing that by the lawes of this Land, the King alone cannot alienate the ancient Jewels and ornaments partaining to the Crowne, ſurely hee cannot give away the Crowne

it ſelfe, and therewithall the Kingdome.

Neither have wee any cuſtome, that the people at pleaſure ſhould elect their King: but they are alwayes bound unto him, who by right of bloud is right ſucceſſour; much leſſe can they confirme and make good that title, which is before by violence uſurped: for nothing can then be freely done, when liberty is once reſtrained by feare. So did *Scilla* by terrour of his Legions, obtaine the law of *Velleia* to be made, whereby hee was created Dictatour for foureſcore yeares: and by like impreſſion of feare, *Cæſar* cauſed the law *Servia* to bee promulged, by which hee was made perpetuall Dictatour: but both theſe lawes were afterwards adjudged void. As for the depoſing of King *Edward* the ſecond it is no more to bee urged, then the poiſoning of King *Iohn*, or the murdering of any other good and lawfull Prince: we muſt live according to lawes, and not to examples: and yet

yet the Kingdome was not then taken from the lawfull ſucceſſour. But if we looke back to times lately paſt, we ſhall find that theſe titles were more ſtrong in King *Stephen*, then they are in the Duke of *Lancaſter*. For King *Henry* the firſt being at large liberty, neither reſtrained in body, nor conſtrained in mind, had appointed him to ſucceed: (as it was upon good credit, certainely affirmed;) The people aſſented to this deſignement; and thereupon without feare, and without force, he was annointed King, and obtained full poſſeſſion of the Realme. Yet *Henry* (Sonne of the Earle of *Anjowe*) having a neerer right by his Mother to the Crowne, (notwithſtanding his Father was a ſtranger, and himſelfe borne beyond the Seas (raiſed ſuch rough warres upon King *Stephen*, that there was no end of ſpoiling the goods and ſpilling the bloud of the unhappy people, beſides the ruines and deformities of many Cities and Holds; untill his lawfull

inheritance was to him assured. It terrifieth mee to remember how many flourishing Empires, and Kingdomes have beene by meanes of such contentions either torne in pieces with detestive division, or subdued to forreigne Princes, under pretence of assistance and aid: and I need not repeate how sore this Realme hath heretofore beene shaken with these severall mischieves: and yet neither the examples of other Countries, nor the miseries of our owne, are sufficient to make us to beware.

O *English men*, worse bewitched then the foolish *Galathians*; our unstayed minds and restlesse resolutions, doe nothing else but hunt after our owne harmes: no people have more hatred abroad, and none lesse quiet at home: in other Countries the sword of invasion hath beene shaken against us; in our owne land, the fire of insurrection hath beene kindled among us: and what are these innovasions, but whetstones

to

to ſharpen the one and bellowes to blow up the other.

Certainely I feare that the ſame will happen unto us which *Æſop* fableth to have beene fallen unto the Frogges; who being deſirous to have a King, a beame was given unto them: the firſt fall whereof did put them in ſome feare, but when they ſaw it lye ſtill in the ſtreame, they inſulted thereon with great contempt, and deſired a King of quicker courage: then was ſent unto them a Storke, which ſtalking among them with ſtately ſteps, continually devoured them. The mildneſſe of King *Richard* hath bred in us this ſcorne, interpreting it to bee cowardiſe and dulneſſe of nature: the next Heire is likewiſe rejected: I will not ſay that with greater courage we ſhall find greater cruelty; but if either of theſe ſhall hereafter bee able to ſet up their ſide, and bring the matter to triall by armes, I doe aſſuredly ſay, that which part ſoever ſhall carry the fortune of the field, the peo-

people both wayes must goe to wrack. And thus have I declared my mind concerning this question, in more words then your wisedom, yet fewer then the weight of the cause doth require: and doe boldly conclude, that we have neither power nor policy, either to depose King *Richard*, or to elect Duke *Henry* in his place; that King *Richard* remaineth still our Soveraigne Prince, and therefore it is not lawfull for us to give judgement upon him; that the Duke whom you call King, hath more offended against the King and the Realme, then the King hath done, either against him or us; for being banished the Realme for tenne yeares by the King and his Counsaile (amongst whom his owne Father was chiefe) and sworne not to returne againe without speciall license: hee hath not onely violated his oath, but with impious armes disturbed the quiet of the Land, and dispossessed the King from his Royall estate, and now demandeth judgement against his

his perſon, without offence proved, or defence heard. If this injury and this perjury doth nothing move us, yet let both our private and common dangers ſomewhat withdraw us from theſe violent proceedings.

This ſpeech was diverſly taken, as men were diverſly affected betweene feare, hope, and ſhame: yet the moſt part did make ſhew for King *Henry*, and thereupon the Biſhop was preſently attached by the Earle Marſhall, and committed to priſon in the Abbey of Saint *Albones*, whoſe counſaile and conjecture then contemned, was afterwards better thought upon; partly in the life time of King *Henry*, during whoſe raigne, almoſt no yeare paſſed without great ſlaughters and executions: but more eſpecially in the times ſucceeding, when within the ſpace of 36. yeares, twelve ſet battailes upon this quarrell were fought within the Realme by *Engliſh* men onely: and more then fourescore Princes

of

of the Royall bloud ſlaine one by another.

Then it was concluded, that King *Richard* ſhould bee kept in a large priſon, with all manner of Princely maintenance: and if any perſons ſhould conſpire to reare warre for his deliverance, that hee ſhould bee the firſt man who ſhould ſuffer death for that attempt. Then the Acts of the Parliament holden at *Weſtminſter*, in the 11. yeare of King *Richard*, were revived; and the Parliament holden the 21. yeare of King *Richard* was wholly repealed: and they who were attainted by that Parliament, were reſtored againe to their fame and honour, and to their Lands, without ſuing livery, and to ſuch goods whereof the King was not anſwered, except the rents and iſſues which had beene received out of their lands in the meane time. Hereupon, *Richard* Earle of *Warwick* was delivered out of priſon, and the Earle of *Arundels* Sonne recovered his inheritance: many others alſo that were

were baniſhed or impriſoned by King *Richard*, were then fully reſtored againe, to their Countrey, Liberty, and Eſtate.

It was further provided, that none of thoſe which came in aid of King *Henry* againſt King *Richard*, ſhould for that cauſe bee impeached or troubled. Alſo the King gave to the Earle of *Weſtmerland* the County of *Richmond*; and to the Earle of *Northumberland* hee gave the Ile of *Man*, to bee houlden of him by the ſervice of bearing the ſword, wherewith hee entred into *England*. Divers other of his followers he advanceth to offices of higheſt place and charge, ſome upon judgement and for deſert, but moſt part to winne favour, and perhaps projecting a plot for friends, if times ſhould change: for in many actions men take more care to prevent revenge, then to lead an innocent and harmeleſſe life.

It was further agreed, that the Procurers of the death and Murther of

of *Thomas* late Duke of *Glouceſter*, ſhould bee ſearched out and ſeverely puniſhed. And judgement was given againſt the appellants of the Earle of *Warwick* and the Earle of *Arundel*, that the Dukes of *Aumerle*, *Suſſex*, and *Exeeter*, the Marqueſſe of *Dorſet*, and the Earle of *Glouceſter* who were preſent, ſhould looſe their degree of honour for them and their Heires: that they ſhould likewiſe looſe all the Caſtles, Mannours, Lordſhips, &c. then in their hands which ſometimes appertained to thoſe whom they did appeale, and that all the letters patents and charters which they had concerning the ſame, ſhould bee ſurrendred into the Chancery, and there bee cancelled: that for all other their Caſtles, Mannours, Lordſhips, Poſſeſſions, and Liberties, they ſhould bee at the grace and mercy of the King: that they ſhould give no liveries, nor keepe any retinue of men, but onely ſuch Officers as were meerely neceſſary for their degree:

degree: that if any of them ſhould adhere to *Richard* the depoſed King, in giving him aid or encouragement, againſt the judgement of his depoſition, then hee ſhould incurre the paines and forfeitures of high treaſon. And becauſe it was a clamorous complaint among the Common people, that many Officers had committed grievous extortions and wrongs, either by the open maintenance or ſecret connivence of theſe Lords: Firſt, thoſe Officers were removed, and that corruption taken away with integrity, which bribery had wrought, in placing (for money) men of bad quality, in high degrees of office and ſervice: then Proclamations were made, that if any man had beene oppreſſed by theſe Lords, or by any Officers under them, he ſhould prove his complaint, & receive recompence. It was made a queſtion whether it was not meet that theſe Noble men ſhould be put to death: the importunity of the people,

people, and the perſwaſion of many great men drew that way, but policy was againſt it, and eſpecially the opinion of clemency, which ſeemed needfull to the ſetling of a new riſen ſtate.

In this Parliament alſo the Lord *Fitzwater* appealed the ſaid Duke of *Aumerle*, Sonne to the Duke of *Yorke*, upon points of High treaſon: likewiſe the Lord *Morley* appealed *John Montacute* Earle of *Salisbury*, and more then twenty other appealants waged battaile; but the King purpoſing to lay the foundation of his Realme by favour and not by force, gave pardon and reſtitution alike to all, upon ſureties and band for their allegeance: and in a ſweet and moderate oration hee admoniſheth, and as it were intreated the one part, that old griefes and grudges ſhould not bee renewed, but buried together with the memory of former times, wherein men were forced to doe many things againſt their minds: the

the other part hee desired to bee more regardfull of their actions afterwards, and for the time past, rather to forget that ever they were in fault, then to remember that they were pardoned. No punishment was laid upon any, save onely the Earle of *Salisbury* and the Lord *Morley*, who had beene in especiall grace and favour with King *Richard*: these two were committed to prison, but at the sute of their friends they were soone released: the rest the King received freely to favour, but most especially the Duke of *Aumerle*, and the Duke of *Exteſter*, Lord Governour of *Calis*. The Duke of *Aumerle* was cousen germane to both the Kings: *John Holland* Duke of *Exeter*, was halfe brother to King *Richard*, and brother in law to King *Henry*; whose Sister, the Lady *Elizabeth*, hee had taken to wife. The greatest matter that was enforced against them, was their loialty unto King *Richard*: (a grievous crime among rebels)

bels) becauſe they did not onely ſtomack and ſtorme at his dejection, but ſtirre alſo more then others, and aſſay to raiſe forces on his behalfe. The Dukes boldly confeſſed the accuſation, that they were indeed unfortunately faithfull to King *Richard*; but as thoſe who once are falſe, doe ſeldome afterwards prove ſoundly firme, ſo they that have ſhewed themſelves true to one Prince may the better bee truſted by any other. The King did rather admit this as a defence, then remit it as a fault: affirming, that ſuch examples were not to bee miſſiked of Princes: to hee entred with them into great termes of friendſhip, and put them in place neereſt his perſon, endeavouring by courteſie and liberalty, to make them faſt and faithfull unto him: this fact was diverſly interpreted, according to mens ſeverall diſpoſitions, ſome admiring the Kings moderation, others diſliking and diſallowing his confidence; and indeed, although theſe meanes have to this purpoſe pre-

prevailed with ſome, yet the common courſe may move us commonly to conjecture, that there is little aſſurance in reconciled enemies: whoſe affections (for the moſt part) are like unto Glaſſe; which being once cracked, can never bee made otherwiſe then crazed and unſound.

Furthermore, to qualifie all prejudice and hard opinion which other Princes might chance to conceive, King *Henry* diſpatched Embaſſadours to divers Countries neere unto him, to make it knowne by what title, and by what favour and deſire of all the people hee attained the Kingdome. To the Court of *Rome*, hee ſent *Iohn Trevenant* Biſhop of *Hereford*, Sir *Iohn Cheyney* Knight, and *Iohn Cheyney* Eſquire: into *France* hee ſent *Walter Sherlow* Biſhop of *Durham*, and Lord *Thomas Pearcy* Earle of *Worceſter*: into *Spaine*, hee ſent *Iohn Trevor* Biſhop of S. *Aſſaphes*, and Sir *William Parre*, and

and into *Almaine* hee ſent the Biſhop of *Bangor*, and certaine other. Moſt of theſe Princes (as in a matter which little concerned either their honour or their harme) ſeemed either not to regard what was done, or eaſily to bee perſwaded that all was done well. But *Charles* King of *France*, was ſo diſtempered at this diſhonourable dealing with his Sonne in law King *Richard*, that by violence of his paſſion, hee fell into his old panges of phrenſie: and at the laſt by helpe of phyſick returning to the ſobriety of his ſences, hee purpoſed to make ſharpe warre upon that diſloyall people (as hee termed them) for this injury againſt their lawfull and harmeleſſe Prince. Many Noble men of *France* ſhewed themſelves very forward to enter into the ſervice, but eſpecially the Earle of Saint *Paul*, who had married King *Richards* halfe Siſter. So letters of defiance were ſent into *England*, and great preparation was made for the warre. Like-

Likewiſe the newes of theſe novelties much abaſhed the *Aquitanes* (who were at that time under the *Engliſh* ſubjection) and plunged their thoughts in great perplexities. Some were grieved at the infamous blemiſh of the *Engliſh* nation, who had deſtained their honour with the ſpot of ſuch diſloyall dealing: others feared the ſpoile of their goods, and oppreſſion of their liberties by the *French-men*; againſt whoſe violence they ſuſpected that the Realme of *England*, being diſtracted into civill factions, either would not attend, or ſhould not bee able to beare them out: but the Citizens of *Burdeaux* were chiefely anguiſhed in reſpect of King *Richard*, partly fretting at his injury, and partly lamenting his infortunity; becauſe hee was borne and brought up within their City. And thus in the violence, ſome of their anger, ſome of their griefe, and ſome of their feare, in this ſort they did generally complaine.

O good

O good God (ſaid they) where is the World become? Saints are turned to Serpents, and Doves into Divels. The *Engliſh* nation which hath beene accompted fierce onely againſt their foes, and alwayes faithfull to their friends; are now become both fierce and faithleſſe againſt their lawfull and loving Prince, and have moſt barbarouſly betrayed him. Who would ever have thought that Chriſtians, that civill people, that any men, would thus have violated all Religion, all Lawes, and all honeſt and orderly demeanure? And although the Heavens bluſh at the view, and the Earth ſweat at the burthen of ſo vile a villany, and all men proclaime and exclaime upon ſhame and confuſion againſt them: yet they neither feele the horrour; nor ſhrinke at the ſhame, nor feare the revenge; but ſtand upon tearmes, ſome of defence for the lawfulneſſe of their dealing, and ſome of excuſe for the neceſſity. Well, let them bee able to blind the

world, and to reſiſt mans revenge; yet ſhall they never be able to eſcape either the ſight or vengeance of Almighty God; which we daily expect, and earneſtly deſire to bee powred upon them. Alas good King *Richard*, thy nature was too gentle, and thy government too mild for ſo ſtiffe and ſtubborne a people: what King will ever repoſe any truſt in ſuch unnaturall ſubjects, but fetter them with Lawes, as theeves are with Irons? What carriage hereafter can recover their credit? What time will bee ſufficient to blot out this blemiſh? What other action could they have done, more joyfull to their enemies, more woefull to their friends, and more ſhamefull to themſelves? Oh corruption of times! Oh conditions of men!

The French-men were nothing diſcontented at this diſcontenement of the Aquitanes, ſuppoſing that opportunity was then offered, to get into their poſſeſſion the Dutchie of

Guian, if either power or policie were thereto applyed. Hereupon *Lewes* Duke of *Burbon* came downe to *Angiers*, who from thence sent many messengers to the chiefe cities of *Guian*, and by faire speeches and large promises, solicited the people to change alleageance: on the contrary side, Sir *Robert Knowles* Lieutenant of *Guian*, endeavoured with al diligence to represse the mutinous, to stay the doubtfull, to confirme the good, and to retaine all in order and obedience: but hee profited very little, whether by the weakenesse of his owne arme, or stiffe neck of the people it is not certainely assured, Neither did the Duke of *Burbone* much prevaile, when it was considered, how ponderous the yonke of *France* was above the English subjection: for all men were well acquainted with what tributes and taxations the French men were charged, having in every countrey Lievtenants and Treasurers assigned, the one to draw the blood, the other

other the ſubſtance of the ſlaviſh ſubjects, whoſe cruelty and covetouſneſſe laid hold without exception upon all, the one tormenting by force, and the other undoing by Law. Thus ſtood the Aquitanes upon tickle tearmes betweene obedience and revolt, as a ſhip which the wind driveth one way, & the tide another: deſirous they were to diſpleaſe the Engliſh, but loath to endanger and undoe themſelves.

Vpon advertiſement whereof, King *Henry* ſent into *Guian*, the Lord *Thomas Perce* Earle of *Worceſter*, whom hee knew to bee faithfull unto him, and expert in matters of charge, having in his company a ſtrong and ſerviceable band of ſouldiers: who not by unſeaſonable exprobating their fault, but by reaſon, convincing it, partly with his wiſdome and credit ſo perſwaded, and partly with his authority and forces ſo terrified the wavering people, that hee wanne them to his

opinion, and confirmed them in their allegeance; the graver sort with respect of duty and faith, the rest with regard and feare of danger. Then hee received oaths of obedience unto King *Henry*, and planted certaine strong garrisons in places of chiefe import, without molestation if they remayned quiet, and yet of force to represse them, if they should rebell. This done, he turned againe into *England*, where he shewed an excellent example of moderation, in seeming rather to have found, then to have made the Aquitanes dutifull subjects.

No sooner could this stirre be stinted, but another more dangerous and desperate did forthwith arise: for divers noble men who either had dissembled, or did repent the furtherance that they used to the advancement of King *Henry*, did conspire together to compasse his destruction: the Historics of that time doe vary, concerning the causes of this conspiracy; whether it were for

favour

favour to King *Richard*, as the nature of man is inclinable, to behold ſuddaine misfortune with a pittifull eye; or for envy to King *Henry*, as commonly wee can endure exceſſive fortune, no where ſo little as in thoſe that have beene in equall degree with our ſelves: or whether upon diſhonours received in the late Parliament, or upon diſdaine to ſee others goe before them in the Princes favour, many ſought to revenge their unjuſt anger with lewd diſloyalty: likewiſe it is not aſſuredly known by what meanes the workers thereof were drawne together, and the ſecret deviſes of ſome imparted to the reſt: whether one of them did perſwade another to enter into the action, or whether all were induced by the ſame unconſtant diſpoſition, and light account of faith: which being once falſed to K. *Richard*, was afterwards upon every light diſcontentment little reſpected to any: but concerning theſe matters, the moſt currant report is this.

There was at that time an Abbot of *Weſtminſter*, one that applyed his ſtudies, not as the moſt part, to cloake idleneſſe and ſloath under the glorious title of religion, but to enable himſelfe for counſaile and direction in publike affaires; who for the generall opinion of his wiſdome and integrity: was in good favour and credit with King *Richard*, and did accompany him in his laſt voyage into *Ireland*.

This Abbot called to his remembrance, a ſpeech which hee heard once fall from King *Henry*, when hee was but Earle of *Derby*, and not yet come to any great ſtayedneſſe, either in yeares or judgement; that Princes had too little, and religious men too much.

At that time the riches of the Church were growne ſo great, that many began to looke upon them with an envious eye; but leſt covetouſneſſe ſhould ſhew it ſelfe with open face, policie was pretended, and the exceſſe thought dangerous, both

both to the King and alſo to the Clergy; as very like to cauſe want to the one, and wantonneſſe in the other.

Hereupon many bils had been put up in the Parliaments holden in the raigne of King *Richard*, that proviſion might bee made to repreſſe the increaſe of religious poſſeſſions; namely, that inquiſition and redreſſe might be had againſt ſuch religious perſons, as under the licence to purchaſe ten pounds yearly, did purchaſe foureſcore, or a hundred pounds: and alſo againſt ſuch religious perſons as cauſed their villaines to take to their wives free-women, inheritable, whereby the Lands came to thoſe religious mens hands: yea it was moved in open Parliament, that the King ſhould ſeaze into his hands, all the temporall Livings of religious houſes, as being rather a burthen, then a benefit unto religion.

Vpon these and the like Petitions, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the Archbishop of *Yorke*, for themselves and the Clergy of their Provinces, were oftentimes compelled to make their solemne protestations in open Parliament, that if any thing were attempted in restraint of the liberty of the Church, they would in no wise assent, but utterly withstand the same: the which their protestations they required to be enrouled.

So partly upon love to King *Richard*, and partly upon feare, least K. *Henry* would be as ready to invade, as he was to inveigh against the richnesse of religious houses: this Abbot was the first man that blew the coales and put fewell to the fire of this confederacy. And first hee observed a farre off, then hee searched more neerly and narrowly (and yet warely too) how the minds of certaine Noble-men were affected, or rather infected against King *Henry*; tempering his speeches in such sort, that if matters sorted to his mind, hee might take

take them upon him, if his courſes were croſſed, hee might clearely diſclaime them: at laſt hee invited to his houſe upon a day, in *Michael. mas* tearme, thoſe whom he had ſounded to bee moſt ſound for his purpoſe: the chiefe of whom were ſuch as in the Parliament before had in ſome ſort beene touched in reputation, although by pardon and reconcilement the harme did ſeeme to bee cloſed up: their names were *Iohn Holland* Duke of Exeter, of whom mention hath beene made before, *Thomas Holland* his brothers Sonne, Duke of *Surrey*, *Edward*, Duke of *Aumerle*, *Iohn Montacute*, Earle of *Salisbury*, *Hugh Spencer*, Earle of *Gloceſter*, *Iohn Biſhop* of *Caerliele*, Sir *Thomas Blunt*, and *Magdalen*, one of King *Richards* Chappell, who in all points, both of feature and favour, ſo neerly reſembled King *Richard*, that the Lords diſſembled afterwards, that hee was King *Richard* indeed.

Theſe and ſome others were high-

ly feasted by the Abbot: and after dinner they withdrew themselves, into a secret Chamber to counsaile: here the Duke of *Exceter*, who was most hotly bent, either to restore, or to revenge the cause of his deposed brother, declared unto the rest, the allegeance that they had sworne unto King *Richard*: the honours and preferments whereunto they were by him advanced: that therefore they were bound both in conscience by the one, and in kindnesse by the other, to take his part against all men: that King *Henry* contrary to both, had dispoyled him of his royall dignity, and unjustly possessed himselfe thereof, whilest they stood looking on, and shewed neither the obedience of subjects, nor love of friends, as though they were men who knew to doe any thing, better then to defend, and if need were to dye for their lawfull Prince and loving Patron: that King *Henry* by violent invading, or fraudulent insinuating himselfe, into the

the kingdom of his naturall & liege Prince, was but a tyrant & usurper, & such a one as it was lawful for any man, by any means to throw down, without respect whether hee were a good man or evill, for it is lawfull for no man upon pretence & shew of goodnes, to draw soveraignty untohimself; that the laws & examples of best governed common-wealths, did not only permit this action, but highly honored it with statues & garlands, & titles of Nobility, & also rewarded it with al the wealth of the suppressed tyrant: that this enterprize would be very profitable, & almost necessary to the Common-wealth, by extinguishing those wars which the Scots menaced; the French-men prepared, & the Welshmen had already begun upon this occasion and quarrell: that he did not distrust but it might be accomplished by open armes, but he thought it more sure for them, and for the Common-wealth more safe, to put first in proofe some secret policy: and to that purpose hee devised, that a

solemne

solemne Iusts should bee challenged, to be keept at *Oxford*, in Christmasse holy-dayes, betweene him and twenty on his part, and the Earle of *Salisbury* and twenty on his part, to which King *Henry* should be invited: and when hee was most intentive in regarding their military disport, hee should suddenly be surprised by men, which without suspition, might at that time bee assembled, both for number and preparation sufficient for the exployt, and thereby King *Richard* presently be restored, both to his liberty, and to his estate.

This devise was no sooner uttered, then allowed and applauded of the rest of the confederates: and so resolving upon the Enterprize, they tooke an oath upon the Evangelists, the one to bee true and secret to the other, even to the houre and point of death: the Lords also made an Indenture sextipartite, wherein they bound themselves, to doe their best assay, for the death of the one King, and deliverance of the other: this

they

they ſealed and ſubſcribed, and delivered to every Lord a counter-pane of the ſame: and further they concluded what forces ſhould be gathered, by whom, how they ſhould bee ordered & placed, and to whoſe truſt the execution ſhould be committed.

When all things were thus contrived, and their hungry ambitious minds were well filled with the vain winds of hope and deſire: the Duke of *Exeter* came to the King at *Windſore*, & deſired him for the love that he bare to the noble feats of Chevalry, that hee would vouchſafe to honour with his preſence the martiall exerciſe, that was appointed betweene him and the Earle of *Saliſbury*, and to be the Iudge of their performances, if any controverſie ſhould ariſe.

The King ſuppoſing that to be intended indeed, which was pretended in ſhew, eaſily yeelded to his requeſt. The Duke ſuppoſing his purpoſe now halfe performed, departed to his houſe, and ſo did the other confederates, where they buſily beſtirred them-

themselves, in raysing men, and preparing horse and armour for the accomplishment of this act.

When the Dutchesse of Exceter, K. *Henries* sister perceived the drift of the devise, and saw that the Duke was upon his journey: alas good Lady how was shee distracted in mind, with a sharpe conflict of her conceipts? one way she was moved with nature towards her brother; another way she was more strongly stirred, with love towards her Lord and husband: and both wayes she was divided in duty. And what (said shee) is this love then against nature? or above it? shall I bee undutifull to my Prince? or is no duty comparable to the duty of a wife? heigh ho: in what perplexities (wretched woman) am I plunged, to see my two dearest friends in this case of extremity, that (it is doubtfull which but) certainely one must bee ruined by the other. Herewith such a shower of teares streamed downe her cheekes, that it drowned her speech, and stopped the

the paſſage of further complaint: which when the Duke eſpyed, hee ſtepped unto her, and ſeazing ſoftly upon her hand, uſed theſe words. What *Beſſe*? is it kindneſſe to me, or kindred to your brother that thus hath ſet your eyes on floate? Content your ſelfe woman, for whatſoever the event ſhall bee, it cannot bee evill to you, nor worſe to mee then now it is. For if my purpoſe prevaile, and my brother be reſtored againe to his Crowne, both of us ſhall bee ſure never to decline: if it be prevented, and your brother continue ſtill in his eſtate, no harme ſhall bee done unto you, and I ſhall bee ſure then of that deſtruction which I doe now continually dread; the feare whereof in expecting, is a greater torment then the paine in ſuffering. When he had thus ſaid, hee kiſſed her, and ſo leaving her to the torture of a thouſand thorny thoughts, hee tooke his Journey towards *Oxford*, with a

great

great company both of Archers and Horſemen. There hee found all the reſt of his complices, well armed and banded, except only the Duke of *Aumerle*.

The King alſo hearing that both the Challengers and Defendants were in a readineſſe, determined the day following to ride to *Oxford*, according to his promiſe and appointment.

Now the confederates much marvelled at the ſtay of the Duke of *Aumerle*, ſome onely blamed his ſlackneſſe, others began to ſuſpect it, every man conjecturing as he was diverſly affected betweene confidence and feare: and in this confuſion of opinions, they ſent unto him in poſte, to know the certaine truth. Before the Meſſenger came to the Duke, he was departed from *Weſtminſter* towards *Oxford*, not the direct way, but went firſt to ſee his Father the Duke of *Yorke*, and carried with him the counterpane of the Indenture of confederacy. As they ſate at dinner, the Father

ther eſpied it in his boſome, and demanded what it was, the ſon humbly craved pardon, and ſaid that it nothing touched him; by Saint *George*, (quoth the Father) but I will ſee it: and ſo whether upon precedent jealouſie, or ſome preſent cauſe of ſuſpition he tooke it away from him by force. When hee perceived the contents, he ſuddenly aroſe from the table, and with great fiercenesſe, both of countenance and ſpeech, uttered to his Sonne theſe words.

I ſee traytor, that idlenesſe hath made thee ſo wanton and mutinous, that thou playeſt with thy faith, as children doe with ſticks: thou haſt beene once already faithleſſe to King *Richard*, and now againe art falſe to K. *Henry*, ſo that like the fiſh *Sepia*, thou troubleſt all the waters wherein thou liveſt. Thou knoweſt that in open Parliament I became ſurety and pledge for thy allegeance, both in body and goods: and can neither thy duty, nor my deſert reſtraine thee, from ſeeking my deſtruction? in faith,

faith, but I will rather helpe forward thine. With that hee commanded his Horſes to be made ready, and preſently tooke his journey towards *Winſore*, where the King then lay.

The Duke of *Aumerle* had no time either to conſult with his friends, or to conſider with himſelfe what was beſt to be done: but taking adviſe upon the ſodaine hee mounted likewiſe on horſe-backe, and poſted towards *Windſore* another way. It was no need to force him forward, his youthfull blood, and his ſodaine danger were in ſteed of two wings, to keepe his horſe in *Pegaſus* pace: ſo that hee came to *Windſore*, and was alighted at the Caſtle, before his ſtiffe aged Father could come neere. Then he entred the gates, and cauſed them to be ſurely locked, and tooke the keyes into his owne hands, pretending ſome ſecret cauſe for which hee would deliver them unto the King. When hee came in preſence

hee

hee kneeled down and humbly craved of the King mercy and forgiveneſſe. The King demanded for what offence? Then with a confuſed voice and ſad countenance, caſting downe his eyes as altogether abaſhed, partly with feare of his danger, and partly with ſhame of his diſcredit; hee declared unto the King all the manner of the conſpiracie. The King ſeemed neither raſhly to beleeve, nor negligently to diſtruſt the Dukes report; neither ſtood it with pollicie to entertaine the diſcovery with any hard and violent uſage: therefore with gracious ſpeeches hee comforted the Duke; and if this bee true, ſaid hee, wee pardon you: if it bee feined, at your extreame perill bee it.

By this time the Duke of *Yorke* was rapping at the Caſtle gates, and being admitted to the Kings preſence, hee delivered to him the Indenture of confederacie, which he had taken from his ſonne. When the

the King had read it, and was thereby perswaded of the truth of the matter, hee was not a little disquieted in mind, complayning of the unconstant disposition of those men, whom neither cruelty (hee said) could make firme to King *Richard*, nor clemency to him, but upon dislike of every present government, they were desirous of any change. So being possessed with deeper thoughts, then to gaze upon games, hee layd his journeyes aside, and determined to attend at *Windsor*, what course his enemies would take, and which way they would set forward: knowing right well, that in civill tumults, an advised patience, and opportunity well taken, are the onely weapons of advantage; and that it is a speciall point of wisdome, to make benefit of the enemies folly. In the meane time he directed his Letters to the Earle of *Northumberland*, his high Constable, and to the Earle of *Cumberland*, his high Marshall, and to others his most assured friends, concer-

nin

ning theſe ſodain and unexpected accidents.

The confederates all this time hearing nothing of the Duke of *Aumerle*, and ſeeing no preparation for the Kings comming, were out of doubt that their treaſon was betrayed. And now conſidering that once before they had beene pardoned the guilt of this their rebellion, excluded them from all hope of further mercie: whereupon they became deſperate, and ſo reſolved to proſecute that by open armes, wherein their privie practiſes had fayled. And firſt they apparelled *Magdalen* (a man very like to King *Richard*, both in ſtature and countenance, and of yeates not diſagreeable) in princely attire, and gave foorth that he was King *Richard*, and that either by favour or negligence of his Keepers, hee was eſcaped out of priſon, and deſired the faith and ayde of his loving ſubjects. Then they determined to diſpatch meſſengers to *Charles* King of *France*, to deſire his

his helpe and assistance on the behalfe of his sonne in law, if need should require.

The common people which commonly are soone changeable, and on the sodaine, as prone to pitty, as they were before excessively cruell, most earnestly wished the enlargement of King *Richard*, and earnestly wishing, did easily beleeve it: in which imaginary conceit, being otherwise men of no deepe search, the presence of *Magdalene* most strongly confirmed them, and so either upon ignorance of truth, or delight in trouble, they joyned themselves in great troops to the Lords: desiring nothing more then to bee the means whereby King *Richard* should be restored, as in a manner resuming their first affections and humours towards him. Then the Lords of this association with great force, but with greater fame, as the manner is of matters unknowne, advanced forward in battell array towards *Windsore*, against King *Henry*, as against an ene-

my

my of the common ſtate; having in their company above forty thouſand armed men. The King upon intelligence of their approach, ſecretly with a few horſe, the next ſunday night after New-yeares day, departed from *Windſore* to the Tower of London, and the ſame night before it was day, the confederates came to the Caſtle of *Windſore*: where miſſing their expected prey, they ſtood doubtfull and divided in opinions, which way to bend their courſe. Some adviſed them with all ſpeed to follow the King to *London*, and not to leave him any leave and liberty, to unite an Army againſt them: that Winter was no let but in idle and peaceable times: that in civill diſſentions nothing is more ſafe then ſpeed, and greater advantage alwayes groweth by diſpatching then deferring: that whileſt ſome were in feare, ſome in doubt, and ſome ignorant, the Citie, yea the Realme might eaſily be poſſeſſed: and that many Armies whoſe fury at the firſt ruſh could

could not be resisted by delayes, did weare out, and waste to nothing. Others who would seeme to be considerate and wise, but in very deed were no better then dastards, perswaded rather to set King *Richard* first at liberty; for if their counterfeiting should be discovered before they possessed themselves of his person, the people undoubtedly would fall from them to the certaine confusion of them all. Hereupon they gave over the pursuit, and retyred to *Colebrooke*, and there delayed out the time of doing, in deliberating, being neither couragiously quicke, nor considerately stayed, but faintly and fearefully shrinking backe: and when they once began to relent, they decreased every day more and more both in power and in hope.

King *Henry* the next morning after he was come to the Tower, sent to the Major of the Citie to put Souldiers in armes for his assistance, who presently presented unto him three thousand Archers, and three thousand

ſand bill-men, beſides thoſe that were appointed for defence of the Citie. The King ſpent upon him many good ſpeeches, and liberally loaded him with promiſes and thankes: and ſoone after hee iſſued out of *London*, with twenty thouſand tall men, and came to *Hounſlow* Heath, abiding there, and as it were daring his enemies to joyne iſſue in the field: contemning their diſorderly multitude, as a vaine terrour of names without forces. But the confederates, either for feare of the Kings power, or for diſtruſt of their owne, or elſe lingring, perhaps, after ſome ſuccour out of *France*, refuſed the encounter; and doubtfull it is, whether they ſhewed greater courage in ſetting up the danger, or cowardiſe, in declining it when it was preſented unto them.

So they departed from *Colebrooke* to *Sunnings*, a place neere *Reading*, where Queene *Iſabell*, King *Richards* wife did then abide;

to whom upon the plain truth before declared fame had falſly deſcanted, that K. *Richard* was eſcaped out of priſon, and did lye at *Pomfret* with a hundred thouſand armed men; and that King *Henry* for feare of him, was fled with his children and friends to the Tower of *London*. All which was as lightly beleeved as it was vainely told: whereupon ſhe defaced King *Henries* armes, and plucked away his cogniſance from thoſe his ſervants that attended upon her; and having in ſome ſort ſatisfied her womanniſh anger, with this harmeleſſe ſpight, ſhee and the Lords departed together firſt to *Wallingford*, and from thence to *Abington*, ſtirring the people by the way to take armour, and to riſe in ayde of King *Richard*, who was (ſaid they) and is, and ſhould be their Prince.

At the laſt they came to *Chicheſter* and there the Lords tooke their lodgings, the Duke of *Surrey*, and the Earle of *Salisbury* in one Inne; the Duke of *Exeter*, and the Earle of

of *Glouceſter* in another; and all the hoaſt encamped in the fields. But the Bayliffe of the Towne, ſuſpecting all this countenance, to bee but the vaine flaſh of a falſe fire, did in the night with about fourescore Archers, beſet, and ſet upon the houſe where the Duke of *Surrey*, and the Earle of *Salisbury* lay; who were men but of weake reſiſtance by nature, but being put upon neceſſity, ſhewed great man-hood and reſiſtance in defending themſelves againſt the Townſmen. The Duke of *Exeter*, and the Earle of *Glouceſter* being in another Inne, were not able by force to reſcue their aſſociates; whereupon a certaine Prieſt of their company ſet divers houſes in the Towne on fire, ſuppoſing thereby to divert the townſmen from their aſſault; to the ſaving of their houſes and of their goods: but this fire greatly inflamed their fury, and made them more obſtinate in their attempt, crying out that they would never labour to reſcue their loſſes, but to revenge them,

and that with the blood of the Lords, vvhose flames should be quenched. Then there arose confused clamours, and noyses, all the towne being in an uproare, and in armes, shooting fiercely, and running upon the Lords with a rash and desperate rage; not caring to loose many, whereof they had many to spare.

When the Earle of *Exeter*, and they that were with him, perceived the force of the assaylants dangerously to encrease, and that it was impossible for a few to sustaine the fury of so many so obstinately bent: they fled out of the back-side towards the Camp, intending to bring the whole Armie to the rescue: but the souldiers having heard a tumult, and seeing fire within the towne, supposed that the King was entred with all his puissance: whereupon being strooke with a sodain and false feare, and wanting a Commander of courage to confirme them, they ran away, and dispearsed themselves without measure; and so whilst every man

man endeavoured to save himselfe, all were brought to their confusion.

Thus the Duke of *Surrey*, and the Earle of *Salisbury*, and the Lords, and Gentlemen which were in their company, were left to defend themselves against the townesmen as they could: who manfully maintained the fight with great bloodshed of their enemies, from midnight untill three of the clocke the next day in the afternoone: at the last, being inferiour both in number and fortune, the Duke and the Earle were wonded to death and taken, and the same Evening their heads were striken off and sent to *London*: there were also taken Sir *Bennet Shelley*, Sir *Barnard Brokas*, Sir *Thomas Blunt*, and twenty eight other Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, who were sent to *Oxford*, where the King then lay, and there were put to execution.

The Duke of *Exeter* when he found

the Army disperſed and fled, fled likewiſe with Sir *John Shelley* into *Eſſex*, lamenting the certaine deſtruction which his raſhneſſe had procured to himſelfe, and to his friends, but moſt eſpecially to King *Richard*, if not as a party, yet as a cauſe of this unhappy tumult; many times hee did attempt to have eſcaped by Sea into *France*, but hee was alwayes driven backe by diſtreſſe of weather; and ſo wandring and lurking in ſecret places, hee was at the laſt attached as hee ſate at ſupper in a certain friends houſe, and led to *Plaſhy*, and there ſhortly after beheaded: ſo that a man might probably conjecture that the death of the Duke of *Glouceſter*, was then brought in reckoning, who by his counſell and contryvance chiefly, in the ſame place had beene apprehended. An excellent example for all thoſe which meaſure their Actions either by their pleaſure, or by their power: that revenge of injurious dealing, although it be prolonged, yet doth never fayle, but com-

commeth surely, although perhaps slowly. This Duke was a man of high parentage, of a franke mind, and wealth answerable thereunto: openly praise worthy, but his secret actions were hardly spoken of: hee was of consent to all his brothers vices, and of counsaile to many, yet somewhat the more close and vigilant man: and not so much partaker of his prosperity, as violently carried with the current of his misery.

The Earle of *Gloucester* fled towards *Wales*, but was forelayed and taken, and beheaded at *Bristow*: *Magdalen* the counterfeit of King *Richard*, flying into *Scotland*, was apprehended and brought to the Tower, and afterward hanged and quartered, with *W. Ferby*, another of King *Richards* Chaplaines. Divers other Lords and Knights, and Gentlemen, and a great number of meane and base persons, were in other places put to death; insomuch as the King, though otherwise of a very temperate, and intreatable na-

ture, seemed to shew too hard and haughty dealing in revenging his owne injury, or father maintaining the injury that hee had done: the heads of the chiefe conspirators, were pitched upon poles, and set over *London* Bridge: in all other parts of the Realme a spectacle both lamentable and ugly was presented to the view and terrour of others: bodies hewen in peices, heads and quarters of unfortunate dismembred wretches putrifying above ground: not all for desert, but many to satisfie, either the malice, or want of King *Henries* friends; insomuch as many grave men openly gave forth, that in short time there would be cause to wish King *Richard* againe, as being more tollerable to endure the cruelty of one, then of many, and to live where nothing, then where any thing might bee permitted.

The Abbot of *Westminster* in whose house, and in whose head the confederacy began, hearing of these adventures

ventures, as hee was going betwene his Monaſtery and his Manſion fell ſodainely into a palſie, and ſhortly after without ſpeech ended his life; and although in this enterpriſe fortune gave policie the check, and by a ſtrange accident, which wiſdome could not foreſee, overturned the deviſe, yet is it certainely affirmed, that this Abbot firſt ſtirred the ſtone, which rowling along, was like to have turned King *Henry* out of his ſeate. The Biſhop of *Caerliel*, was condemned upon this treaſon, but the extremity of his feare, and griefe, cloſed up his dayes, and prevented the violence and ſhame of publike execution. And now King *Richard* after he had abdicated his dignity, did but ſhort time enjoy that ſweet ſecurity, which hee did vainely expect, and firſt all his goods which he did give in ſatisfaction of the injuries that he had done, were brought to diviſion & ſhare amongſt his enemies: ſhortly after he was removed frō the tower, to the caſtle of Leeds in *Kent*,

and from thence to *Pomfret*, to the end that by often changing he might either more ſecretly be diſpatched, or more uncertainely found: here being kept in ſtreight priſon, both innocent and ignorant of this offence, hee was notwithſtanding made a party in the puniſhment. For King *Henry* perceiving that the Lords ſo farre prevailed with their late ſtratagem, that if their ſtomack had beene anſwerable to their ſtrength, and their bold beginning had not ended in faintneſſe and ſloath, they might have driven him to a hard hazard; cauſed King *Richard* to bee put to death, intending to make ſure, that no man ſhould cloak open rebellion, under the colour of following ſides, nor countenance his conſpiracy, either with the perſon or name of K. *Richard*: whether he did expreſly command his death, or no, it is a queſtion; out of queſtion he ſhewed ſome liking and deſire to the action, and gave allowance thereto when it was done.

The moſt current report at that time

time went, that he was princely ſerved every day at the Table, with abundance of coſtly meats, according to the order preſcribed by Parliament, but was not ſuffered to taſte or touch any one of them; and ſo periſhed of famine; being tormented with the preſence of that, whereof hee dyed for want, but ſuch horrible and unnaturall cruelty, both againſt a King and a kinſ-man, ſhould not proceed from King *Henry* (mee thinke) a man of a moderate and mild diſpoſition, nor yet from any other mind, which is not altogether both ſavage in humanity, and in religion prophane. One writer who would ſeeme to have the perfect intellgence of theſe affayres, maketh report, that King *Henry* ſitting at his Table ſad and penſive, with a deepe ſigh brake forth into theſe words: Have I no faithfull friend that will deliver mee of him, whoſe life will breed deſtruction to mee and diſturbance to the Realme, and whoſe death will bee a ſafety and quiet to both? for how

can

can I be free from feare, ſo long as the cauſe of my danger doth continue? and what ſecurity, what hope ſhall we have of peace, unleſſe the ſeed of ſedition bee utterly rooted out.

Vpon this ſpeech a certain Knight called Sir *Pierce* of *Extone*, preſently parted from the Court, accompanied with eight tall men, and came to *Pomfret*, and there commanded, that the Eſquire, who was accuſtomed to ſewe, and take the aſſay before King *Richard*, ſhould no more uſe that manner of ſervice: and let him (quoth hee) now eat well, for he ſhall not eat long. King *Richard* ſate downe to dinner, and was ſerved without courteſie or aſſay, whereat hee marvelled, and demanded of the Eſquire, why he did not his duty? the Eſquire anſwered, that hee was otherwiſe commanded by Sir *Pierce* of *Extone*, who was lately come from King *Henry*. The King being ſomewhat moved at his act and anſwer, tooke the carving knife in

in his hand, & ſtruck the Eſquire therwith lightly on the head, ſaying, the devil take *Henry* of *Lancaſter* & thee together: with that Sir *Pierce* entred the Chamber, with eight men in harneys, every one having a bill in his hand: Whereupon King *Richard* perceiving their drift and his owne danger, put the table from him, and ſtepping ſtoutly to the formoſt man, wreſted the bill out of his hand, wherewith (although unarmed and alone) hee manfully defended himſelfe a good ſpace, and ſlew foure of his aſſaylants. Sir *Pierce* lept to the Chaire where King *Richard* was wont to ſit, whileſt the reſt chaſed him about the Chamber. At the laſt being forced towards the place where Sir *Pierce* was, hee with a ſtroake of his Pollax felled him to the ground: and forthwith hee was miſerably rid out of his miſerable life. It is ſaid that at the point of his death, he gathered ſome ſpirit, and with a faint and feeble voice, groaned forth theſe words.

My

My great Grandfather King *Edward* the ſecond, was in this manner depoſed, impriſoned, and murthered; by which meanes my Grandfather King *Edward* the third obtained poſſeſſion of the Crowne; and now is the puniſhment of that injury powred upon his next ſucceſſor. Well, this is right for me to ſuffer, but not for you to doe: your King for a time may joy at my death, and enjoy his deſire; but let him qualifie his pleaſures with expectation of the like juſtice: for God who meaſureth all our actions by the malice of our minds, will not ſuffer this violence unrevenged.

Whether theſe words proceeded from a diſtempered deſire, or from the judgement of his fore-ſight, they were not altogether idle and vaine. For Sir *Pierce* expecting great favour and rewards for his ungracious ſervice, was fruſtrated of both, and not onely miſſed that countenance for which hee hoped, but loſt that which before he had:

had: ſo odious are vices even where they are profitable.

Hereupon he grew at the firſt diſcontented, and afterwards mightily turmoyled and tormented in conſcience, and raging againſt himſelfe would often exclayme, that to pleaſure one unthankefull perſon, hee had made both him ſelfe and his poſterity, hatefull and infamous to all the world.

King *Henry* with great diſcontentment and diſquiet held the Kingdome during his life: and ſo did his ſonne King *Henry* the fifth: in whoſe time by continuall warres againſt the *French-men*, the malice of the humour was otherwiſe exerciſed and ſpent. But his ſecond ſucceſſour King *Henry* the ſixth was diſpoſſeſſed thereof, and together with his young ſonne *Henry*, impriſoned and put to death, either by the commandement, or connivence of King *Edward* the fourth.

And

And hee alſo eſcaped not free; for hee dyed not without many and manifeſt ſuſpicions of poyſon: and after his death his two ſonnes were diſinherited, impriſoned, and butchered by their cruell Vncle the Duke of *Glouceſter*, who being a Tyrant and Vſurper, was lawfully ſlaine in the field; and ſo in his perſon (having no iſſue) the tragedie did end. Which are moſt rare and excellent examples, both of comfort to them that are oppreſſed, and of terrour to violent Dealers; that God in his ſecret judgement doth not alwayes ſo certainely provide for our ſafety, as revenge our injuries and harmes: and that all our unjuſt actions have a day of payment, and many times by way of retaliation, even in the ſame manner and meaſure wherein they were committed.

And thus was king *Richard* brought to his death, by violence and force, as all Writers agree, although

though al agree not upon the manner of the violence. He was aman of perſonage, rather wel proportioned then tall, of great beauty, and grace, and comelineſſe in preſence; hee was of a good ſtrength, and no abject ſpirit; but the one by eaſe, the other by flattery were much abaſed. Hee deſerved many friends, but found few, becauſe hee ſought them more by liberality, then vertuous dealing. Hee was marvellous infortunate in all his actions, which may very well be imputed to his negligence and ſloath; for he that is not provident can ſeldome proſper, but by his looſeneſſe will loſe, whatſoever fortune, or other mens labours doe caſt upon him. At the laſt hee was driven to ſuch diſtreſſe, that hee accounted it as a benefit, to be diſburdened of his royall dignity, for which other men will not ſticke, to put their goods, and lives, and ſoules in hazard.

Hee

Hee lived three and thirty yeares, and raigned two and twenty. His dead body was embalmed, and seared, and covered with Lead all save his face, and carried to *London*, and in all the chiefe places by the way, his face was uncovered and shewen, that by view thereof no doubt should bee made concerning his death. At *London* hee had a solemne obsequie kept in the Cathedrall Church of Saint *Paul*, the King being present, and all the chiefe men of the Citie.

Then hee was conveyed to *Langley Abbey* in *Buckinghamshire*, about twenty miles from *London*, and there obscurely enterred by the Bishop of *Chester*, the Abbot of S. *Albones*, and the Abbot of *Waltham*, without presence of noblemen, without confluence of the common people, and without the charge of a dinner for celebrating the Funerals: but afterwarward at the commandement of King *Henry* the fifth, his body was taken up, and removed

moved to *Weſtminſter*, and honourably entombed amongſt his anceſtors, with Queene *Anne* his wife, in expiation (as it is like) of his Fathers violent and unfaithfull dealing. So hee whoſe life was alwaies tumultuous and unquiet, could not readily find reſt for his bones, even after death. It was not amiſſe in regard of the Common-wealth that hee was dead; yet they who cauſed his death had ſmall reaſon to reckon it among their good deeds.

And thus doe theſe and the like accidents daily happen to ſuch Princes as will bee abſolute in power reſolute in will, and diſſolute in life.

This yeare *Humfrey*, the ſonne and heyre of the Duke of *Glouceſter*, dyed of the plague; as hee returned out of *Ireland*, where King *Richard* had left him priſoner and ſhortly after the Dutcheſſe his Mother with violence of griefe ended her dayes: this yeare alſo dyed

dyed *Thomas Mowbray* the Exiled Duke of *Norfolke*, whose death would much have beene lamented, if hee had not furthered so many lamentable deaths: but he over-lived his honour, and saw himselfe accounted a person infamed and of no estimation. Likewise about this time, *Iohn* Duke of *Brittaine* deceased, who had taken to wife *Mary* daughter to King *Edward* the third, and by her had no issue, but by *Ioan* his second wife, hee left behind him three sonnes, *Iohn*, *Richard*, and *Arthur*: this *Ioan* was afterwards married to King *Henry*: as hereafter shall appeare. Also this yeare *Edmund* Duke of *Yorke* departed this life, his honour not stayned, his fame not touched: he was a man very circumspect and wary in his carriage, not careleſſe of a good fame, nor greedy after a great: of other mens wealth not desirous, liberall of his owne, and of the common, sparing: hee did not by obstinate opposing himselfe

ſelfe againſt the current of the time, raſhly haſten, either his fame, or his fall; but by moderation attained ſafely that degree of prayſe, and honour, which others aſpiring unto by deſperate courſes, wanne with ambitious death, without any other profit at all. He left behind him two noble ſons, expreſſe reſemblancers of his integrity: *Edward*, who ſucceeded in his dignity, and before was called Duke of *Aumerle*, and *Richard* Earle of *Cambridge*. *Edward*, in the change of the ſtate, neither conſtantly kept his fidelity, nor ſtoutly maintained his treaſon. *Richard* tooke to wife the daughter and heyre of *Roger Mortimer*, whoſe mother *Phillip* was ſole daughter and heyre to *Lionell* Duke of *Clarence*, the third ſonne of King *Edward* the third, by which title and diſcent, his poſterity claimed the Crowne and Kingdome of this Realme from the ſucceſſors of King *Henry*, as hereafter more at large ſhall be declared.

Charles

Charles King of *France* lost no time all this while in making preparation to invade *England*: and to that end had now rayſed an Army royall, which was brought downe into *Picardie*, and in a readineſſe to have beene tranſported. But it is very like that this haſte for the deliverance of King *Richard* did the more haſten his death: upon newes whereof the *French-men* perceiving their purpoſe for his reſtitution to bee to no purpoſe, gave over the enterpriſe; ſome being grieved that the occaſion was loſt of making ſpoyle of ſo plentifull a countrey, others being well content to be diſcharged of that hope, together with the hazard whereupon it depended. Shortly after the French King ſent a ſolemne Embaſſage into *England*, to treate, or rather intreate, that Lady *Iſabel* his daughter, who had beene eſpouſed to King *Richard*, might with her dowrie bee reſtored to him againe. King *Henry* moſt honourably received theſe Embaſſadors, and gaue an-

anſwer, that he would ſpeedily ſend his Commiſſioners to *Calice*, which ſhould fully commune and conclude with them, both of this and other weighty affayres concerning both the Realmes.

Not long after hee ſent *Edward* Duke of *Yorke*, and *Henry* Earle of *Northumberland* to *Calice*: Alſo the French King ſent the Duke of *Burbone*, and certaine others to *Bulleine*. Theſe Commiſſioners did often meet, ſometimes at one place, and ſometimes at another: the French-men eſpecially required, that Lady *Iſabell* ſhould be reſtored, ſhewing that King *Charles* her Father had given in charge, that this before all matters, and without this nothing ſhould be concluded. On the other ſide the Engliſhmen deſired that ſhee might bee married to *Henry* Prince of *Wales*, King *Henries* eldeſt ſonne, a man anſwerable to her in equall degree, both of blood and of yeares: but the French King denyed that hee would

would any more joyne affinity with the Englisſh nation, whoſe aliance had once ſo unfortunately ſucceeded: then they entred into ſpeech of a perpetuall peace, but hereto the Frenchmen would not agree. In the end it was concluded that Lady *Iſabell* ſhould be delivered to King *Charles* her Father, but without Dower; becauſe the marriage betweene King *Richard* and her, was never conſummate: by reaſon whereof ſhee was not donable by the very treaty of the marriage. Alſo the ſurceaſe of armes which foure yeares before had beene made with King *Richard*, for the terme of thirty yeares, was continued and confirmed for the time then unexpired. Some Authors affirme, that a new truce was taken, but theſe alſo are at difference: for ſome report that it was during the life of both the Kings; others, that it was but for a ſhort time, which hath the more appearance of truth, by reaſon of the

open

open hostility which the yeare following did breake forth betweene the two Realmes.

Shortly after King *Henry* sent the Lady *Isabel* under the conduct of Lord *Thomas Percy* Earle of *Worcester*, in Royall estate to *Calis*: she was accompanied with a great troupe of honourable personages, both men and women; and carried with her all the Iewels and Plate which shee brought into *England*, with a great surplusage of rich gifts bestowed upon her by the King: at *Calis* shee was received by the Earle of S. *Paul*, Lieutenant for the *French* King in *Picardy*, and by him was conducted to King *Charles* her Father, who afterwards gave her in marriage to *Charles* Sonne to *Lewes* Duke of *Orleance*: and so was either rest, or respite of warres procured in *France*, whilest neerer stirres might bee brought to some stay.

For within the Realme, the fire and fury of the late sedition was scarcely quenched and quiet, but (that

the Common-wealth ſhould not ceaſe to bee torne, by multiplying of diviſions, one ſtreight ſucceeding another) the *Welſhmen*, upon advantage of the doubtfull and unſetled eſtate of King *Henry*, reſolved to break and make a defection; before either the King could ground his authority, or the people frame themſelves to a new obedience: and having learned that common cauſes muſt bee maintained by concord, they ſought by aſſemblies to eſtabliſh an aſſociation: and to ſet up their owne principality againe.

To this purpoſe they created for their Prince, *Owen Glendor* an Eſquire of *Wales*, a factious Perſon, and apt to ſet up diviſion and ſtrife: and although hee was of no great eſtate in birth; yet was hee great and ſtately in ſtomack: of an aſpiring Spirit: and in wit ſomewhat above the ordinary of that untrained people: bould, crafty, active, and as he liſted to bend his mind, miſchievous or induſtrious in equall degree, in deſires immoderate, and

and rashly adventurous, in his young yeares he was brought up to the study of the Common law of the Realme, at *London*: and when hee came to mans estate, besides a naturall fierceneſſe and hatred to the *Engliſh* name, he was particularly incensed by a private ſuite, for certaine lands in controverſie, betweene the Lord *Gray* of *Ruthen* and him; wherein his title was overthrowne; and being a man by nature not of the mildeſt, by this provocation he was made ſavadge and rough; determining either to repaire or to revenge his loſſe, by ſetting the whole ſtate on fire. Alſo his expence and liberality had beene too exceſſive for a great man to endure, which brought him to bareneſſe, too baſe for a meane man to beare: and therefore he muſt of neceſſity doe and dare ſomewhat, and more danger there was in ſoft and quiet dealing, then in hazarding raſhly. Herewith oportunity was then likewiſe preſented: for trouble ſometimes are moſt fit for great attempts,

and ſome likelihood there was, whileſt the King and the Lords were hard at variance, that harme might eaſily bee wrought to them both. Vpon theſe cauſes his deſire was founded, and upon theſe troubles his hope. But that his aſpiring and ambitious humour might beare ſome ſhew of honeſt meaning, hee pretended to his Countreymen the recovery of their free eſtate, the deſire whereof was ſo naturally ſweet, that even wilde birds will rather live hardly at large in the aire, then bee daintily dieted by others in a Cage; and oportunity was at that time fitly offered, or elſe never to bee expected, to rid them of their thraldome, falſely and colourably intituled a peace, whileſt the one Kings power was waining, and the other not yet fully wexen, and either of them grew weake by waſting the other: neither was their any difference which of them ſhould prevaile, ſith the warre touched both alike, inſomuch as the overthrow would ruine the one, and the

the victory the other; So he exhorted them to take courage and armes: and first to kill all the *English* within their territories, for liberty and Lords could not endure together: then to resume their ancient customes and lawes, whereby more then armes, Common-wealths are established and enlarged: so should they be a people uncorrupt, without admixion of forraigne manners of bloud; and so should they forget servitude, and either live at liberty or else perhaps, be Lords over other.

Hereupon many flocked unto him, the best for love of liberty, the basest for desire of booty and spoile, insomuch as in short time hee became Commander of competent forces to stand openly in the field. And being desirous to make some proofe of his prowesse, hee sharply set upon his old adversary *Reignold* Lord *Grey* of *Ruthen*, whose possessions hee wasted and spoiled; slew many of his men, and tooke himselfe prisoner; yet gave him faire and friendly entertainment,

and promiſed him releaſement, if he would take his Daughter to wife. This he deſired, not ſo much for need of his ability or aid, as ſuppoſing that the name and countenance of a Lord, would give reputation to the houſe that was then but in riſing: but the Lord *Grey* at the firſt did not ſo much refuſe as ſcorne the offer: affirming that hee was no ward, to have his marriage obtruded upon him. Well (ſaid *Owen Glendore*) although you bee not my ward, yet are you in my ward: and the ſuing your livery will coſt double the marriage money that elſewhere you ſhall procure. The Lord *Grey* being not very rich to diſcharge his ranſome, and ſeeing no other meanes of his deliverance, at the laſt accepted the condition, and tooke the Damoſell to wife; notwithſtanding his deceitfull Father in law, trifled out the time of his enlargement untill hee died.

The *Welſhmen* being confident upon this ſucceſſe, beganne to breake into the borders of *Herreford-ſhire*, and to

to make ſpoile and prey of the Countrey: againſt whom Lord *Edmund Mortimer* Earle of *March*, who for feare of King *Henry* had withdrawne himſelfe (as hath beene declared) to *Wigmore* Caſtle, aſſembled all the Gentlemen of the Countrey, and meeting with the *Welchmen*, they joyned together a ſharpe and cruell conflict: not in forme of a looſe skirmiſh, but ſtanding ſtill and maintaining their place, they endeavoured with maine might to breake and beare downe one another. The courage and reſolution of both ſides was alike, but the *Welſhmen* were ſuperiour both for number and direction: for they were conducted by one knowne *Leader*, who with his preſence every where aſſiſted at need, enflaming his ſouldiers, ſome with ſhame and reproofe, others with praiſe and encouragement, all with hope and large promiſes: but the *Engliſh men* had no certaine generall, but many confuſed Commanders, yea every man was a Commander to himſelfe,

ſelfe, preſſing forward or drawing back, as his owne courage or feare did move him. Inſomuch as no doubt they had taken a great blow that day by their ill governed boldneſſe, had not *Owen Glendor* preſently upon the breaking up of the field, ceaſed to purſue the execution, and ſhewed himſelfe more able to get a victory, then skilfull to uſe it. But even to his ſide the victory had coſt bloud, and many of thoſe which remained, were either wounded or weary: the night was neere alſo, and they were in their enemies Countrey; by which meanes our men had liberty to retire rather then runne away, no man being hot to follow the chaſe. They loſt of their company about a thouſand men, who ſold their lives at ſuch a price, that when manhood had done the hardeſt againſt them, certaine manniſh, or rather deviliſh women, whoſe malice is immortall, exerciſed a vaine revenge upon their dead bodies, in cutting off their privy parts and their noſes, whereof the one they

ſtuff'd

ſtuffed in their mouths, and preſſed the other betweene their buttocks; and would not ſuffer their mangled carcaſſes to bee committed to the earth, untill they were redeemed with a great ſumme of money. By which cruell covetouſneſſe, the faction loſt reputation and credite with the moderate ſort of their own people; ſuſpecting that it was not liberty but licentiouſneſſe which was deſired: and that ſubjection to ſuch unhumane minds would bee more inſupportable then any bondage.

In this conflict, the Earle of *March* was taken priſoner and fettered with chaines, and caſt into a deepe and vile dungeon. The King was ſolicited by many Noble men, to uſe ſome meanes for his deliverance; but he would not heare on that care; hee could rather have wiſhed him and his two ſiſters in Heaven, for then the onely blemiſh to his title had beene out of the way: and no man can tell whether this miſchance did not preſerve him from a greater miſchiefe.

Owen Glendore by the prosperous successe of his actions, was growne now more hard to be dealt with, and hautely minded, and stood even upon termes of equality with the King: whereupon he proceeded further to invade the Marches of *Wales* on the West side of *Severne*; where he burnt many Villages and Townes, slew much people, and returned with great prey, and praises of his adherents. Thus he ceased not this yeare to infest the borderers on every side, amongst whom he found so weake resistance, that he seemed to exercise rather a spoile then a warre. For King *Henry* was then detained with his chiefest forces, in another more dangerous service, which besides these former vexations and hazards, this first yeare of his raigne happened unto him.

For the *Scots* knowing that changes were times most apt for attempt, and upon advantage of the absence of all the chiefe *English* borderers, partly by occasion of the Parliament, and partly,

partly by reaſon of the plague which was very grievous that yeare in the North parts of the Realme: they made a road into the Countrey of *Northumberland*, and there committed great havock and harme. Alſo on a certaine night, they ſodainly ſet upon the Caſtle of *Werke*, the Captaine whereof Sir *Thomas Gray*, was then one of the Knights of the Parliament: and having ſlaine the watch partly a ſleepe, partly amazed with feare, they brake in and ſurpriſed the place: which they held a while, and at the laſt ſpoiled and ruinated and then departed. Whileſt further harmes were feared, this paſſed with light regard. But when great perils were paſt, as if no worſe misfortune could have befallen, then was it much ſorrowed and lamented. And in revenge thereof, the *Engliſhmen* invaded and ſpoiled certaine Ilands of *Orkney*: and ſo the loſſe was in ſome ſort repaired: yet (as in the repriſals of warre it commonly falleth out) neither againſt thoſe particular perſons

sons which committed the harme, not for those which suffered it: but one for another were both recompenced and revenged. Againe, the *Scots* set forth a fleet, under the conduct of Sir *Robert Logon*, with direction to attempt as occasion should bee offered: his first purpose was against our Fishermen; but before he came to any action, hee was incountred by certaine *English* ships, and the greatest part of his fleet taken. Thus peace still continuing between both the Realmes, a kind of theevish hostility was dayly practised, which afterwards brake out into open warre upon this occasion.

George of *Dunbarre* Earle of the *Marches* of *Scotland*, had betrothed *Elizabeth* his Daughter to *David*, the Sonne and Heire apparent of *Robert* King of *Scots*, and in regard of that marriage to be shortly celebrated and finished, hee delivered into the Kings hands a great summe of money for his Daughters dowry. But *Archibald* Earle *Dowglasse* disdaining that the

Earle

Earle of *Marches* bloud ſhould bee preferred before his, ſo wrought with King *Robert*, that Prince *David* his Son refuſed the Earle of *Marches* Daughter, and tooke to wife *Mariell* Daughter to the Earle *Dowglaſſe*: Earle *George* not uſed to offers of diſgrace, could hardly enforce his patience to endure this ſcorne: and firſt hee demanded reſtitution of his money, not ſo much for care to obtaine, as for deſire to pick an occaſion of breaking his allegeance. The King would make to him neither payment nor promiſe, but trifled him off with many deluſory and vaine delayes: Whereupon hee fled with all his family into *England*, to *Henry* Earle of *Northumberland*, intending with open diſloyalty both to revenge his indignity, and recover his loſſe. The *Engliſhmen* with open armes entertained the oportunity; with whoſe helpe and aſſiſtance, the Earle made divers incurſions into *Scotland*, where hee burnt many Townes, and ſlew much people, and dayly purchaſed

ſed with his ſword, great aboundance of booty and ſpoile.

Hereupon King *Robert* deprived the Earle of his honour, ſeized all his goods and poſſeſſions, and wrote unto King *Henry*, as hee would have the truce betweene them any longer to continue; either to deliver unto him, the Earle of *March* and other Traytours to his perſon and ſtate, or elſe to baniſh them the Realme of *England*. King *Henry* perceiving ſuch jarres to jogger betweene the two Realmes, that the peace was already as it were out of joynt, determined not to loſe the benefit of the diſcontented Subjects of his enemy: whereupon hee returned an anſwer to the Heraûld of *Scotland*, that hee was neither weary of Peace, nor fearefull of Warres, and ready as occaſion ſhould change, either to hold the one, or hazard the other: but the word of a Prince was of great weight; and therefore ſith hee had granted a ſafe conduct to the Earle of *March* and his company,

pany, it were an impeachment to his honour, without just cause to violate the same. Vpon this answer the King of *Scots* did presently proclaime open warre against the King of *England*, with bloud, fire, and sword.

King *Henry* thought it policy, rather to beginne the warre in his enemies Countrey, then to expect it in their owne, because the Land which is the seat of the warre, doth commonly furnish both sides with necessary supply; the friend by contribution, and the enemy by spoile. Therefore sending certaine Troopes of horsemen before him, both to espy and to induce an uncertaine terrour upon the enemy, hee entred into *Scotland* with a puissant army; wherewith hee burnt many Villages and Townes, cast downe diverse Castles, and ruined a great part of the Townes of *Edenborough* and *Lith*, sparing nothing but Churches & religious houses: so that in all places as hee passed, the spectacle was ougly

and

and grisly which he left behind him; bodies torne in pieces, mangled and putrified limmes, the aire infected with stinck, the ground imbrued with corruption and bloud, the Countrey wasted, the Grasse and Corne troden downe and spoiled; insomuch as a man would have said that warre is an exercise not of manhood, but of inhumanity. They that fled before the army, filled all places with feare and terrour, extolling above truth the *English* forces, to diminish thereby their shame in running from shame.

In the end of *September*, the King besieged the Castle of *Maydens* in *Edenborough*; wherein were *David* Duke of *Rothsay* Prince of the Realme, and *Archibald* Earle *Dowglasse*; the inconstancy of the one, and ambition of the other, were principall causes of all this warre.

During this siege, *Robert* Duke of *Albony*, who was appointed Governour of the Realme, because the King was sick and unable to rule, sent an

Herauld

Herauld unto *Henry*; assuring him upon his honour that if hee would abide but six dayes at the most, hee would give him battaile, and either remove the siege, or loose his life.

The King was well pleased with these tidings, and rewarded the Herauld with a gowne of silke, and a chaine of gould, and promised him in the word of a Prince, to abide there and expect the Governour, during the time by him prefixed.

The six dayes passed almost six times over, and no more newes was heard of the Governour, either by presence, or by messenger. Winter came on, and victuaile failed, the Countrey was cold and fruitlesse, and it rained every day in great aboundance; so that partly by hunger, partly by distemperature of the weather, the Souldiers beganne to dye of the *Flixe*; it is very like that these accidents stayed the Governour from performing his promise, for policy was against it, to hazard his men in the field, when Winter and want,

want, two forceable foes had given the charge upon his enemies: certaine it is, that they moved the King to remove his ſiege, and to depart out of *Scotland*, without any battaile or skirmiſh offered.

Both the Wardens of the *Marches* were all this time in *Scotland* with the King: upon which advantage the *Scots* did breake into *Northumberland*, and burnt certaine Townes in *Bamborough* Shire. The *Engliſhmen* were ſpeedily up in armes; but the *Scots* more ſpeedily made their returne, or elſe no doubt they had beene mette with, and encountered.

Againe when King *Henry* had diſcharged his army, the *Scots* being deſirous not ſo much of life as of revenge, made a ſudaine road into *England*, under the conduct of Sir *Thomas Halibarton* of *Dirleton*, and Sir *Patrick Hebburne*, of *Hales*: but all the harme which they wrought did rather waken then weaken the *Engliſh-men*: and

and they themſelves were ſomewhat encouraged, but nothing enriched, by that which they got.

Not long after, Sir *Patrick Hebburne*, being lifted up in deſire and hope, reſolved to undertake a greater enterprize: the people, which are eaſily led by proſperous ſucceſſe, in great Companies reſorted to him; but hee was loath to have more fellowes in the ſpoile, then hee thought ſhould need in the danger: therefore with a competent army of the men of *Loughdeane*, hee invaded *Northumberland*, where hee made great ſpoile, and loaded his Souldiers with priſoners and prey. There was no queſtion made what perill might bee in the returne: Therefore they marched looſely and licentiouſly as in a place of great ſecurity, not keeping themſelves to their enſignes and order: but the Earle of *Northumberlands* Vice-warden, and other Gentlemen of the borders in good array, ſet upon

upon them at a Towne in *Northumberland* called *Nesbit*. The *Scots* rallied as well as the ſuddainneſſe did ſerve, and valiantly received the charge; ſo that the battaile was ſharp and cruell, and continued a good time, with great mortality. In the end, the enemies rankes grew thinne, as being rather confuſedly ſhuffled together, then orderly and firmely compacted: and when the Vice-warden felt them weake in the ſhock, and yeelding under his hand, with a company which hee purpoſely retained about him for ſuddaine diſpatches and chances of warre, hee fiercely charged and diſordered them. Sir *Patrick Hebburne* being cleane deſtitute both of Counſaile and courage ranne up and downe from one place to another, commanding many things, and preſently forbidding them againe; and the leſſe of force his directions were, the oftner did hee change them: anon (as it happeneth in loſt and deſperate caſes) every man became a Commander,

mander, and none a putter in execution: ſo the rankes looſed and brake, and could not bee reunited, the victour hotly purſuing the advantage. Then might you have ſeene a grievous ſpectacle, purſuing, killing, wounding, and taking, and killing thoſe that were taken, when better were offered: every where weapons, and dead bodies, and mangled limmes lay ſcattered: and ſometimes in thoſe that were ſlaine, appeared at their death both anger and valour.

Sir *Patrick Hebburne* thought of nothing leſſe then either fleeing or yeelding, but thruſting among the thickeſt of his enemies, honourably ended his life. Many other of his lineage, and the flower of all *Loughdeane* were likewiſe ſlaine.

There were alſo taken, Sir *Iohn* and *William Cockburne*, Sir *William Baſſe*, *Iohn* and *Thomas Hablinſton* Eſquires, and a great multitude of common ſouldiers.

On

On the *English* side, no great number was slaine; and those of no great service and degree. And with these troubles the life and raigne of King *Henry* the fourth ended.

FINIS.